



This is to certify that the  
thesis entitled

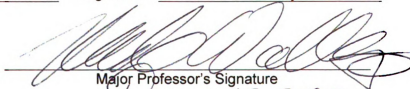
MULTIPLE GAP-, STAND- AND LANDSCAPE-SCALE  
FACTORS AFFECT REGENERATION IN MANAGED  
NORTHERN HARDWOOD FORESTS

presented by

Megan Shanahan Matonis

has been accepted towards fulfillment  
of the requirements for the

M.S. degree in Forestry



Major Professor's Signature

Dec 15, 2009

Date

**PLACE IN RETURN BOX** to remove this checkout from your record.  
**TO AVOID FINES** return on or before date due.  
**MAY BE RECALLED** with earlier due date if requested.

| DATE DUE | DATE DUE | DATE DUE |
|----------|----------|----------|
|          |          |          |
|          |          |          |
|          |          |          |
|          |          |          |
|          |          |          |
|          |          |          |
|          |          |          |
|          |          |          |
|          |          |          |
|          |          |          |

**MULTIPLE GAP-, STAND- AND LANDSCAPE-SCALE FACTORS AFFECT  
REGENERATION IN MANAGED NORTHERN HARDWOOD FORESTS**

**By**

**Megan Shanahan Matonis**

**A THESIS**

**Submitted to  
Michigan State University  
in partial fulfillment of the requirements  
for the degree of**

**MASTER OF SCIENCE**

**Forestry**

**2009**

## **ABSTRACT**

### **MULTIPLE GAP-, STAND- AND LANDSCAPE-SCALE FACTORS AFFECT REGENERATION IN MANAGED NORTHERN HARDWOOD FORESTS**

By

Megan Shanahan Matonis

The perpetuation of extensive and economically, socially and ecologically important northern hardwood forests relies largely on natural regeneration below canopy gaps created by selection harvesting. I explored factors affecting the abundance, composition and survival of seedlings and saplings in harvest gaps across northern hardwood stands in the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan with both a natural experiment and a mesic conifer planting experiment. Sapling abundance was highly variable; nearly fifty percent of harvest gaps were devoid of sugar maple saplings (the dominant overstory species), but abundance was great in other stands (up to 32,100 saplings / ha). Sugar maple sapling abundance was lower on southern stands with rich soil nutrient conditions where estimated winter deer densities were high. Deer browse pressure was high in the study area. Almost all planted hemlock seedlings were browsed, demonstrating the futility of restoring browse preferred coniferous species where winter deer densities are high. Seedling and sapling abundance were positively influenced by canopy openness and negatively by cover of competing vegetation, but effects were weaker than those of Habitat Type and deer density. There was only limited evidence of seed source limitations in these stands. Results illustrate that natural and artificial regeneration in managed northern hardwood forests are affected by multiple interacting and spatially varying factors that need to be considered when planning timber harvests, implementing restoration efforts and modeling regeneration dynamics.

Copyright by  
MEGAN SHANAHAN MATONIS  
2009

Dedicated to my loving and caring Grandmother, the shining queen of our family. Your presence will be missed but never forgotten.

## **ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS**

Earning my Master's degree has been an opportunity to utilize science to explore an interesting ecological question with management implications, but more importantly, it has been an opportunity to interact with many great people without whom my success would not have been possible. I would like to acknowledge the people who inspired me to challenge myself, who assisted me with my research, who reminded me to have fun, who provided me with intellectual insight and who offered me comfort and support.

Thank you to my many field assistants who kept great attitudes on rainy days, on hot days when bugs swarmed our heads, and even on a day when the tire of the truck fell off while we were driving. I was accompanied in the field by Andrea Bianco, Amanda Falk, Phillip Kurzeja, Alyssa Nugent, Ashlie Peterson, Erik Palm, Nick Reno, Grant Slusher and the hardworking crew of Tom Nolta, and I was assisted in the lab by Julia Jones, Chad Babcock and James Bussa. Thank you so much for your dedication, sunny personalities and encouragement.

I must extend a special thank you to Jim Cousineau from whom I rented a comfortable lakeside cabin during summer field work. Jim, a 76 year old man with the energy of a youth in his twenties, was a warm and welcoming host who provided me with insights from his life in the woods.

William Brondkye, Linda Lindberg, Jim Ferris and Eric Thompson from the Michigan Department of Natural Resources, Greg Lake from American Forest Management and Charlie Becker from Plum Creek were instrumental in finding forest stands for my research. I enjoyed the opportunities to develop relationships with forest

land managers so I could learn how to tailor my research to benefit their efforts at promoting sustainable forestry.

I would like to thank Dr. Kyung-Hwan Han, Dr. Donatien Kamden and Dr. Laurent Matuana from Michigan State University for permitting me to use their laboratories and equipment. My committee members, Dr. Andrew Finley, Dr. Rique Campa, Dr. Richard Kobe, and my major adviser Dr. Mike Walters were engaged in my research and provided me with useful insights into the process of scientific inquiry. Dr. Walters was a great advisor who provided me with assistance when needed but also the freedom to manage my own project. I appreciate the opportunities he gave me to present my research to forest managers and researchers. Thank you to Dr. James Millington who provided me with intellectual support, kept me company on multiple eight hour drives to the UP and worked with me in the field to execute the mesic conifer planting project.

Thank you to Steven Pierce and Yun Xue from the Center for Statistical Training and Consulting for providing me with assistance as I taught myself how to analyze generalized linear mixed models with Bayesian inference.

I am very grateful to Dr. Jack Liu and the Center for System Integration and Sustainability (CSIS) for the wonderful working environment and the financial support they provided me with. Due to the financial support through the USDA CSREES grant for the Western Upper Peninsula Economic Ecological Modeling Project, I never felt constrained to limit the scope of my research. Through CSIS I was also fortunate enough to interact with Dr. Bill Taylor who offered me the chance to serve as the assistant for the Michigan Department of Natural Resources Statewide Council, who helped me think

about my goals and how I can achieve them in my future, and who introduced me to Mark Rey who helped me acquire an internship with the Forest Service.

Thank you to Michigan State University for the wonderful education and financial assistance through an Academic Achievement Graduate Assistantship.

I want to thank the Binkley-Higgins family, my second family, for their love and support throughout the years. Thank you to my scientific mentor and lifetime adviser, Dr. Dan Binkley, who initially inspired me to pursue forestry and who taught me to think critically and creatively. I also want to thank my Ferency housemates, and my other dear friends who I met through the larger Michigan State University Student Housing Cooperative network, for all the great memories. I want to thank Mike Heyse, my boyfriend, for helping me to control my stress level.

I am eternally grateful to my wonderful, loving and supportive family. Thank you to my aunts, uncles, cousins and grandparents for making it a point to let me know how loved I am. Thank you to my Canadian relatives who invited me to their homes during the holidays and sporadically throughout the year for much needed vacations. Thank you to my sister, my best friend, who can always be counted on for a funny story or a kind word. Thank you also to my fantastic parents. My mother taught me to let passion and compassion run my life, and my father taught me self-motivation and work ethic. I want to especially thank my dearest Grandma who passed away last year. She was the most wonderful grandma and helped to keep me going by calling or sending letters when I needed comfort the most. I am so thankful to have known her.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

|                                                                                                                  |     |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| LIST OF TABLES.....                                                                                              | ix  |
| LIST OF FIGURES.....                                                                                             | xv  |
| INTRODUCTION.....                                                                                                | 1   |
| CHAPTER 1                                                                                                        |     |
| GAP-, STAND- AND LANDSCAPE-SCALE FACTORS AFFECT NORTHERN<br>HARDWOOD REGENERATION FOLLOWING SELECTION HARVESTING |     |
| Abstract.....                                                                                                    | 4   |
| 1.1 Introduction.....                                                                                            | 5   |
| 1.2 Methods.....                                                                                                 | 9   |
| 1.3 Results.....                                                                                                 | 21  |
| 1.4 Discussion.....                                                                                              | 28  |
| 1.5 Conclusion.....                                                                                              | 39  |
| CHAPTER 2                                                                                                        |     |
| SNOW DEPTH, DECIDUOUS-LOWLAND CONIFER FOREST EDGES AND<br>DEER DENSITY AFFECT SEEDLING BROWSE DAMAGE             |     |
| Abstract.....                                                                                                    | 77  |
| 2.1 Introduction.....                                                                                            | 78  |
| 2.2 Methods.....                                                                                                 | 81  |
| 2.3 Results.....                                                                                                 | 88  |
| 2.4 Discussion.....                                                                                              | 91  |
| 2.5 Conclusion.....                                                                                              | 96  |
| APPENDICES                                                                                                       |     |
| Appendix A: Description of Study Stands.....                                                                     | 111 |
| Appendix B: Additional Details on Methodology.....                                                               | 117 |
| Appendix C: Sample R2WinBUGS code and WinBUGS models.....                                                        | 132 |
| Appendix D: Assessing Convergence.....                                                                           | 139 |
| Appendix E: Model Parameters.....                                                                                | 149 |
| LITERATURE CITED.....                                                                                            | 155 |

## LIST OF TABLES

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                          |    |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| Table 1.1. Northern hardwood Habitat Type descriptions (Burger and Kotar 2003).....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      | 43 |
| Table 1.2. Model specification for spatial trend, full and null generalized linear multilevel models (GLMM), linear multilevel models (LMM) and linear models (LM). $\mu_{ij}$ is the predicted value for gap $i$ at stand $j$ . $H'$ =Shannon diversity index.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      | 45 |
| Table 1.3. Abundance of saplings 1-7 m tall per 154 m <sup>2</sup> gap plot (per hectare of gap area): Average (Ave), median (Med), standard deviation (Stdev), minimum (Min) and maximum (Max) and percent of gap plots where present (% gaps) (n=347 gaps).....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        | 46 |
| Table 1.4. Sapling type by species and height. Gap colonizers germinated after gap formation and advanced regeneration saplings were present before harvest.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         | 47 |
| Table 1.5. Summary of gap and stand-level independent variables: Average (Ave), median (Med), standard deviation (Stdev), minimum (Min), maximum (Max) and number of gap or stand-level observations (N obs).....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        | 47 |
| Table 1.6. Kendall tau rank correlations between gap and stand-level variables. Comparisons between gap-level and stand-level variables use stand-averages for gap-level variables to comply with independence assumptions.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                          | 48 |
| Table 1.7. Differences in stand-level and stand average gap-level variables by Habitat Type based on Kruskal-Wallis rank sum test. Inter-quartile ranges are listed for those variables that significantly differ between Habitat Types. Significant comparisons ( $p < 0.05$ ) are based on Wilcoxon signed-rank test with Bonferroni adjusted p-values.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            | 49 |
| Table 1.8. Spatial patterns in sapling abundance 1-2 m tall, stocking levels and Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ): mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in that variable with Northing or Easting (UTM position rescaled from 0 to 1). Parameter estimates are on the log or square root scale due to the use of a log-link or transformations (where indicated). Null models include the overall intercept and random stand-level intercepts for multilevel models and the overall intercept for growth rate linear models. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for the spatial model over the null model..... | 50 |

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              |     |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Table 1.9. Spatial patterns in gap- and stand-level variables: bootstrap parameter estimate and 95% confidence intervals for stand-level variables or stand averages of gap-level variables. Positive values indicate increases in that variable with Northing or Easting (UTM position rescaled from 0 to 1). Gap- and stand-level variables were not standardized for this analysis.....                                                   | 54  |
| Table 1.10. Deviance Information Criterion for full models (all gap- and stand-level covariates) and null models (overall intercept and random stand-level intercepts for multilevel models and the overall intercept for growth rate linear models) and number of gaps and stands with observations. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.....                                  | 62  |
| Table 2.1. Multilevel logistic regression models used to explore the effects of gap- and stand-level variables on percentage ( $p_{ij}$ ) of white pine or hemlock seedlings browsed in gap $i$ at stand $j$ in 2008. The number of seedlings browsed is $y_{ij}$ , the number of seedlings relocated is $n_{ij}$ , and the random stand-level intercept is $\alpha_j$ .....                                                                 | 99  |
| Table 2.2. Summary of gap- and stand-level variables: Average (Ave), median (Med), standard deviation (Stdev), minimum (Min), maximum (Max) and number of gap or stand-level observations (N obs).....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | 100 |
| Table 2.3. Kendall's tau rank correlation between gap- and stand-level variables. Comparisons between gap-level and stand-level variables use stand-averages for non-centered gap-level variables to comply with independence assumptions. UTM Easting and Northing values were taken from the center of the deer pellet transects.....                                                                                                      | 100 |
| Table 2.4. Average height (stdev), number seedlings found (N.found), percent found (of 2040 seedlings / species planted), browsed and severely browsed (browse category 3 or 4 for hemlock only) for planted seedlings across all gaps and stands in spring 2008.....                                                                                                                                                                        | 102 |
| Table 2.5. Number of seedlings found (N.found) and percent found, browsed, severely browsed (hemlock only), desiccated and percentage of desiccated seedlings showing evidence of browse for hemlock at the same 11 stands and for pine at the same 19 stands visited in both spring 2008 and 2009. Hemlock seedlings were only resurveyed in 2009 at stands where more than 50% of the seedlings had not been severely browsed in 2008..... | 102 |

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |     |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Table 2.6. Multilevel logistic regression models predicting the gap-level percentage of a hemlock seedlings severely browsed or white pine seedlings browsed in 2008: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Deer and DSW were grand mean centered and pellets were group (i.e. stand) mean centered. Estimates are on the logistic scale, so a change of one unit in the independent variables corresponds to a change of at most $\beta/4$ on the probability scale. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.....                                                                               | 106 |
| Table 2.7. Multilevel logistic regression models predicting the gap-level percentage of a hemlock seedlings severely browsed or white pine seedlings browsed in 2008 for a subset of thirteen stands where distance to lowland conifer was determined: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distribution. DSW was grand mean centered and pellets and DLC were group (i.e. stand) mean centered. Estimates are on the logistic scale, so a change of one unit in the independent variables corresponds to a change of at most $\beta/4$ on the probability scale. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model..... | 108 |
| Table 2.8. Mean predicted probability (Pr.) (95% prediction quantiles) of severe browse for hemlock seedlings and probability of browse for white pine seedlings under different gap pellet count (stand centered) and deep snow week conditions. Predictions are for an unmeasured stand based on one-to-one simulations using the posterior distribution for Model 3 parameters.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               | 109 |
| Table A.1. Description of 59 study stands including average snow depth November 2007 – April 2008 (cm), county, ownership, Habitat Type, relative densities (RD) of the three most abundant overstory tree species and average stand diameter at breast height (DBH) of mature trees with dbh >20 cm, and year of harvest entry (YOE).....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           | 111 |
| Table A.2. Geological characteristics for each stand, including landform type, soil type, upper layer soil texture and sugar maple site index at age 50 (SI <sub>50</sub> ) in meters estimated for each soil type and soil series.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              | 114 |
| Table B.1. Species-specific parameter values for “b” in equation estimating dbh from stump diameter (equation 2) and standard error of estimated dbh (Demaerschalk and Omule 1978). “Species” refers to the species from this study and “Equivalent species” refers to the species from Demaerschalk and Omule 1978.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             | 118 |
| Table B.2. Parameter estimates ( $\beta$ ), standard errors (SE), AIC and adjusted R <sup>2</sup> values from linear regression models to predict log transformed basal area (BAu) of trees with dbh < 20 cm.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | 121 |

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              |     |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Table B.3. Parameter estimates ( $\beta$ ), standard errors (SE), AIC and adjusted $R^2$ values from linear regression models to predict quadratic mean diameter (QMDt) of trees with dbh > 2.54 cm.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     | 122 |
| Table B.4. Sensitivity analysis: percent change in diameter growth (DG) with given percent change in BAu or QMDt and sensitivity index (absolute percent change in diameter growth divided by absolute percent change in BAu or QMDt).....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   | 124 |
| Table B.5. Number of section (N. sections) centers separated by different distances. The average of the semivariance values from the points in the different distance bins was used to develop the semivariogram (Figure B.3).....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           | 130 |
| Table D.1. Convergence in models of spatial trends in seedling and sapling abundance and log transformed stocking-level: sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic $N$ (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and $I$ (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains..... | 140 |
| Table D.2. Convergence in LMM of spatial trends in square root transformed Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ): Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic $N$ (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and $I$ (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.....             | 141 |
| Table D.3. Convergence in LM of spatial trends in log transformed sapling growth rate after harvest: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic $N$ (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and $I$ (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.....                     | 141 |
| Table D.4. Convergence in GLMM of seedling abundance with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic $N$ (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and $I$ (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.....                               | 142 |
| Table D.5. Convergence in GLMM of sapling (1-2 m) abundance with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic $N$ (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and $I$ (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.....                        | 143 |

Table D.6. Convergence in LMM of log transformed sapling 1-7 m tall stocking with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.....144

Table D.7. Convergence in LMM of square root transformed of Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ) with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.....145

Table D.8. Convergence in LM of log transformed sapling growth rates with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.....146

Table D.9. Convergence in multilevel logistic models of gap-level percentage of seedlings browsed with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.....147

Table D.10. Convergence in multilevel logistic models of gap-level percentage of seedlings browsed with gap- and stand-level covariates for stands where DLC could be determined: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.....148

Table E.1. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on seedling abundance <1 m tall: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in seedling abundance with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate on the log scale. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.....149

Table E.2. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on sapling abundance 1-2 m tall: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in sapling abundance with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate on the log scale. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type for ironwood and other species. ATD-Hp and AOCa were combined as the reference Habitat Types to improve convergence of the sugar maple model. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.....150

Table E.3. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on log transformed sapling 1-7m tall: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Only gaps with stocking-levels > 0 by species were used in these analyses. Positive values indicate increases in stocking-levels on the log scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.....151

Table E.4. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on square root transformed Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ) for seedlings, saplings 1-2 m and saplings 1-7 m tall: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Only gaps with  $H' > 0$  by size class were used in these analyses. Positive values indicate increases in  $H'$  on the square root scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.....152

Table E.5. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on log transformed sapling after harvest growth rates (m/yr): mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in growth rate on the log scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.....153

## LIST OF FIGURES

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |    |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| Figure 1.1. Hypothesized factors affecting northern hardwood regeneration throughout seedling and sapling ontogeny and the relationships between them. This is not an all inclusive diagram, but highlights many of the factors the literature and field observations emphasize as important.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 | 41 |
| Figure 1.2. Map of study area. MI=Michigan, WI= Wisconsin, ON= Ontario, Canada.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               | 42 |
| Figure 1.3. Relationship between maximum observed seedling and sapling density in a 154 m <sup>2</sup> gap plot among 347 study gaps versus height. This relationship was used to develop stocking estimates. $\text{Log}_e(\text{Density}) = -2.316 \times \text{Log}_e(\text{Height}) + 5.738$ .....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            | 44 |
| Figure 1.4. Site average sugar maple sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance per gap plot across the study area. For reference, 10 saplings / gap plot is 650 saplings / hectare and 227 saplings / gap plot is 14,746 saplings / hectare of gap area.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 | 51 |
| Figure 1.5. Site average ironwood sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance per gap plot across the study area. For reference, 10 saplings / gap plot is 650 saplings / hectare and 82 saplings / gap plot is 5,327 saplings / hectare of gap area.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      | 52 |
| Figure 1.6. Site average other species sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance per gap plot across the study area. For reference, 10 saplings / gap plot is 650 saplings / hectare and 208 saplings / gap plot is 13,512 saplings / hectare of gap area.....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               | 53 |
| Figure 1.7. Spatial distributions of Habitat Types by UTM Easting and Northing (scaled to 0-1). Letters indicate significant differences between Habitat Types based on Wilcoxon signed-rank test with Bonferroni adjusted p-value. Violin plots show distribution of values and median (white dot), interquartile range (thick vertical line) and range of values 1.5 * IQR (thin vertical line).....                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            | 55 |
| Figure 1.8. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on seedling (<1 m tall) abundance: mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in seedling abundance with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate on the log scale. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. SM=sugar maple, IW=ironwood, Other=other species, SP <sub>2008</sub> = seedling production potential ( $\Sigma \text{diameter}^2 / \text{distance}^2$ ) for 2008, Random Int. Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.1..... | 57 |

Figure 1.9. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on small sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance: mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in sapling abundance with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate on the log scale. AOCa and ATD-Hp are reference Habitat Types for sugar maple and AOCa is the reference Habitat Type for ironwood and other species. SM=sugar maple, IW=ironwood, Other=other species,  $SP_{Harvest}$ = seedling production potential ( $\Sigma \text{diameter}/\text{distance}^2$ ) at time of harvest, Random Int. Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.2.....59

Figure 1.10. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on log transformed sapling (1-7 m tall) stocking-level: mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in sapling stocking on the log scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. SM=sugar maple, IW=ironwood, Other=other species,  $SP_{Harvest}$ = seedling production potential ( $\Sigma \text{diameter}/\text{distance}^2$ ) at time of harvest, Random Int. Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.3.....61

Figure 1.11. Observed sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance and mean posterior predicted values and 95% credible intervals per gap plot from generalized linear mixed models with gap- and stand-level covariates (full model) and the null model with an overall intercept and stand-level random effect intercepts.....64

Figure 1.12. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on square root transformed Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ) for seedling (<1 m tall) ( $H'$ seedling), small saplings (1-2 m tall) ( $H'$ Sap1) and all saplings (1-7 m tall) ( $H'$ SapTot): mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in  $H'$  on the square root scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type.  $H'$ Overstory =  $H'$  of overstory trees for  $H'$ Seedling and  $H'$  of overstory trees and stumps for  $H'$ Sap1 and  $H'$ SapTot. Random Int. Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.4.....66

Figure 1.13. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on log transformed sapling post-harvest growth rates (m/yr mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in growth rate on the log scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. SM=sugar maple, IW=ironwood, Other=other species, Advanced Regen= bivariate variable indicating if a variable is advanced regeneration. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.5.....68

Figure 1.14. Sugar maple and ironwood sapling growth rate after harvest for gap colonizers and advanced regeneration (ad regeneration).....69

Figure 1.15. Predicting sugar maple abundance / gap plot (or / hectare of gap area) for an observed stand: median and 95% percentile predictions based on one to one simulations drawing from the posterior coefficient distributions and random effects intercept for an observed ATM stand where a gap had 387 saplings in a gap plot (25,140 / ha of gap area). Simulations were run with different covariate conditions (holding all else equal): all at observed covariate values for this gap and stand, changing Habitat Type (HT) to AOCa/ATD-Hp, increasing deer density from 4 to 16 deer/km<sup>2</sup> (observed to observed plus one standard deviation), increasing canopy openness (CO) from 5 to 12% and increasing cover of competing vegetation (CV) from 18 to 41%.....70

Figure 1.16. Predicting sugar maple abundance / gap plot (or / hectare of gap area) for an unmeasured stand: Median and 95% percentile predictions based on one to one simulations drawing from the posterior coefficient distributions and randomly drawing the stand-level intercept from  $\sim N(\mu, \sigma_{\alpha})$  where  $\mu$  is defined by the stand-level covariates and  $\sigma_{\alpha}$  is the random stand-level intercept stand deviation. Simulations were run with different covariate conditions (holding all else equal) for a gap at an AOCa and ATD type stand: all at average observed covariate values, increasing deer density from 14 to 26 deer/km<sup>2</sup> (average observed to average observed plus one standard deviation), increasing canopy openness (CO) from 13 to 20% and increasing cover of competing vegetation (CV) from 42 to 65%. A break was added to the y-axis so changes in the median prediction could be seen.....71

Figure 1.17. Percentage of gaps harvested 8-15 years ago where a species was removed (stump species) and there was at least one sapling of the same in the gap plot. Species codes: Con=conifer (eastern hemlock, northern white cedar, balsam fir and white spruce), YB= yellow birch, BW= American basswood, QA= quaking aspen, SM= sugar maple, RM= red maple, BC= black cherry, IW=ironwood. Numbers below species codes indicate the number of gaps where that species was removed by harvesting.....72

Figure 1.18. Percentage of gaps sugar maple (SM), ironwood (IW) or other species are the dominant stump species (highest relative basal area of stumps removed from gap) and percentage of gaps these species are the dominant sapling species (highest relative stocking level of saplings 1-7 m tall). Percentage of gaps with no saplings is also presented. N= 211 gaps harvested 8-15 years ago.....73

Figure 1.19. Average estimated deer density (deer / km<sup>2</sup>) from 1996-2000 created from universal kriging (Appendix B, Section B.5) of 113 observations collected by the Michigan Department of Natural Resources and deer density estimates from winter 2007-2008. Estimates for winter 2007-2008 are positively correlated with the MDNR 1996-2000 estimates (Kendall's  $\tau=0.27$ ,  $p\text{-value}=0.002$ ).....74

Figure 1.20. Differences in stand average seedling abundance / 2 m<sup>2</sup>, small sapling (1-2 m) abundance / gap plot and sapling stocking levels / gap plot by Habitat Type. Gap plots were 154 m<sup>2</sup>. Letters indicate significant differences between Habitat Types for sugar maple based on Wilcoxon signed-rank test with Bonferroni adjusted  $p\text{-value}$ . Kruskal-Wallis rank sum test indicated that sapling abundance and sapling stocking were not significantly different between Habitat Types for ironwood or other species, but it was significant for seedling of both species. However, no pairs of Habitat Types were significantly different based on the Wilcoxon test. Violin plots show distribution of values and median (white dot), interquartile range (thick vertical line) and range of values 1.5 \* IQR (thin vertical line).....76

Figure 2.1. Location of stands and estimated winter 2007-2008 deer density overlaid the number of weeks from November 2007 to April 2008 predicted to have snow depth > 40 cm. MI=Michigan, WI=Wisconsin, USA. ON=Ontario, Canada.....98

Figure 2.2. Correlation between stand-mean centered gap distance to lowland conifer (DLC) and stand-mean centered gap pellet group counts (PGC). Lower image shows the correlation between the non-centered estimates. Non-parametric Kendall's tau rank correlations ( $\tau$  ( $p\text{-value}$ )) are presented.....101

Figure 2.3. Percentage of seedlings browsed / stand by species based on browsed vs not-browsed categorization. Distributions were all significantly different from each other based on Wilcoxon signed-rank test with bonferroni adjusted  $p\text{-value}$ . Violin plots show distribution of values and median (white dot), interquartile range (thick vertical line) and range of values 1.5 \* IQR (thin vertical line).....103

Figure 2.4. Observed percentages of hemlock seedlings severely browsed / stand in 2008 (and 2009 in the distance to lowland conifer (DLC) plot only) versus estimated winter deer density, stand average pellet group count (PGC), deep snow weeks (DSW), and stand average gap-DLC. Non-parametric Kendall's tau rank correlations ( $\tau$  ( $p\text{-value}$ )) are presented.  $\tau$  was not calculated for 2009 observed percentage browsed versus DLC due to low sample size ( $n=4$ ). \*\* $p\text{-value} < 0.05$ , \*  $p\text{-value} < 0.10$ .....104

Figure 2.5. Observed percentages of pine seedlings browsed / stand in 2008 (and 2009 in the distance to lowland conifer (DLC) plot only) versus estimated winter deer density, stand average pellet group count (PGC), deep snow weeks (DSW), and stand average gap-DLC. Non-parametric Kendall's tau rank correlations ( $\tau$  (p-value)) are presented. \*\*p-value < 0.05, \* p-value < 0.10.....105

Figure 2.6. Observed percentage of hemlock seedlings severely browsed and white pine seedlings browsed / gap in 2008 versus mean posterior predicted percentages per gap and 95% credible intervals from logistic mixed models. Model 3 includes deep snow weeks and stand-centered gap-level pellet group counts as covariates and model 1 (null model) includes only an overall intercept and stand-level random effect intercept. Observed percentage on the x-axis has been jittered for visualization (random jitter is equivalent for Model 3 and Model 1 plots within species).....107

Figure B.1. Layout of pellet count transects.....117

Figure B.2. Effect of the prior on the standard deviation ( $\sigma$ ) of the random stand-level intercept in the sugar maple sapling abundance generalized linear multilevel model: mean, 90% credible interval (thick black line), and 95% credible interval (thin black line) of the posterior distribution. IG (inverse gamma) prior was on the precision ( $1/\sigma^2$ ) and half normal and uniform density priors were on  $\sigma$ . The half normal distribution was  $\sim N(0, 10,000)$ , bounded above 0.....126

Figure B.3. Effect of the prior on the standard deviation ( $\sigma$ ) of the random stand-level intercept in the gap-level percentage browsed hemlock seedlings logistic multilevel model: mean, 90% credible interval (thick black line), and 95% credible interval (thin black line) of the posterior distribution. IG (inverse gamma) prior was on the precision ( $1/\sigma^2$ ) and half normal and uniform density priors were on  $\sigma$ . The half normal distribution was  $\sim N(0, 10,000)$ , bounded above 0.....126

Figure B.4. Average estimated deer density (deer/km<sup>2</sup>) from DNR pellet count surveys 1996-2000 within Iron, Dickinson, Marquette and Menominee counties versus UTM Northing for the Public Land Survey section. Log transformed deer density =  $23.8518 - 4.0e-06 \times \text{UTM Northing}$  based on GLS-estimation. AIC is 107.7 compared to 85.7 for the null model.....128

Figure B.5. Semivariogram of the residuals from the GLS-estimated relationship between average estimated deer density (deer/km<sup>2</sup>) and UTM Northing. A lag distance of 2,000 m and an exponential model form were used.....129

Figure B.6. Observed deer density estimates versus values predicted from cross validation.....131

## INTRODUCTION

Northern hardwood forest (maple-beech-birch type) spans over 53.7 million acres throughout the Great Lakes, North Central and Northeastern United States (Smith et al 2004) and is the predominant forest type in Michigan (Potter-Witter and Lacksen 1993). These forests have high multi-use value because they produce millions of cubic meters of timber each year for pulp, lumber and veneer, they support summer and winter recreation activities and provide habitat for wildlife (Filip 1973; OMNR 1998).

Northern hardwood forests have undergone, and are undergoing changes in structure and composition due in part to the interrelated disturbances of harvesting and deer herbivory (Kraft et al 2004). During the early commercial logging era in the Lake States from the mid 1800's to early 1900's, forests were clear cut and white pine and hemlock were virtually eliminated from many forests (Stearns 1997). As early as the 1920's, industrial forest companies began experimenting with selection harvesting as a sustained yield approach (Stearns 1997). With the publication of long-term studies demonstrating the benefits of this approach (Eyre and Zillgitt 1953) and the development of marking guides (Arbogast 1957), selection harvesting has become common practice in northern hardwood stands. It is advocated as a silvicultural practice that meets ecological and economic objectives by mimicking gap phase dynamics and capitalizing on the ability of these forests to naturally regenerate (Nyland 1998). However, when seedlings and saplings fail to grow into larger size classes, it threatens the ability of these forests to sustain long-term timber production (Nyland 1998) and could destabilize the economy in areas such as the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan where the timber industry is one of the main economic drivers (Racevskis and Lupi 2006).

Forest harvesting, along with increased agricultural activity, the extirpation of predators, and legislation to regulate hunting has created landscape conditions favorable for white-tailed deer (Rooney 2001; Cote et al 2004). Although a natural herbivore in northern hardwood forests, white-tailed deer populations have reached unprecedented densities and are exerting changes on understory composition in hardwood forests (Rooney 2001). Browsing by white-tailed deer (*Odocoileus virginianus*) can decrease seedling and sapling densities (Stoeckeler et al 1957; Horsley et al 2003; Rooney and Waller 2003; Eschtruth and Battles 2008) by reducing height increments and survivorship (Liang and Seagle 2002; Horsley et al 2003; Eschtruth and Battles 2008). Although intense browse by white-tailed deer (*Odocoileus virginianus*) is often cited as the major cause of regeneration failure after harvest treatments in hardwood forests (Stoeckeler et al 1957; Shafer et al 1961; Marquis and Brenneman 1981; Cook 2008), seedling and sapling layers are affected by a suite of abiotic and biotic factors throughout their ontogeny, so studying deer density in isolation of other factors produces limited results (Didier and Porter 2003).

Seed source, light availability, competing vegetation, deer density and soil nutrient and moisture conditions were identified from the literature and field observations as key factors limiting regeneration in northern hardwood forests. Chapter 1 describes a study that assesses the relative effect of these factors on seedling and sapling abundance and composition below harvest gaps in 59 northern hardwood stands across the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan. This natural experiment took advantage of the north to south gradient in winter deer density across this landscape and the variation in gap sizes/light availability within stands created by harvest practices. Although causal

relationships cannot be established from natural experiments, this approach can reveal patterns and associations between variables across their natural range of variation and can be implemented in a more spatially intensive and extensive manner.

Restoring the white pine and eastern hemlock components that were once part of northern hardwood forests are conservation goals across the Great Lakes region in order to increase biodiversity and alter white-tailed deer winter and summer range availability (Herman et al 2004). Chapter 2 describes a study that assesses the efficacy of efforts to plant mesic conifer seedlings in an area of the Western Upper Peninsula with a gradient in snow depth, variation in winter deer densities and variation in landscape contexts related to winter range suitability for deer (i.e. distance to lowland conifer stands used by deer for winter shelter). Results from this study demonstrate a relationship between seedling browse damage and deer density estimated by the fecal pellet technique and can assist with directing restoration efforts.

The two studies in this thesis were performed in managed forests and focus on seedling and sapling populations (natural or artificially planted) in harvest gaps and explore impacts of deer herbivory, as well other factors on seedling and sapling abundance and composition (Chapter 1) and survival (Chapter 2). Results demonstrate that relatively simple mechanisms, such as differences in shade tolerance, cannot be used to explain and predict forest dynamics because various interacting and spatially varying factors act as regeneration filters. Insight into the relative contributions of regeneration limiting factors, provided by my multivariate assessment at multiple stands across a broad geographic area, can assist with predicting future forest structure and composition and with managing northern hardwood forests for the many services they provided.

## **Chapter 1: Gap-, stand- and landscape-scale factors affect northern hardwood regeneration following selection harvesting**

### **Abstract**

The abundance and diversity of saplings regenerating below canopy gaps are affected by a suite of abiotic and biotic variables including seed source, light availability, soil moisture and nutrient regime, competition from understory vegetation and herbivory. Multivariate approaches that explore gap-, stand- and landscape-scale factors across broad geographic areas are necessary to assess the relative effects of these factors and to understand spatial patterns in regeneration success. To this end, I measured seedling and sapling layers and quantified the previously listed factors within 347 canopy gaps created by selection harvesting across 59 northern hardwood stands in the Western Upper Peninsula where winter deer density increases with latitude. A multilevel modeling approach was taken to account for the hierarchical structure of the data (i.e. gaps nested within stands), and parameter estimates from these models were used to simulate sapling abundances under various gap- and stand-level conditions. Sapling abundance of sugar maple (*Acer saccharum* Marsh.) was higher on stands with lower estimated deer densities, higher snow depths, and less nutrient rich Habitat Types underlain with coarser textured substrates. Habitat Type (a proxy for stand soil moisture and nutrient regime) had the greatest effect on sugar maple sapling abundance, followed by deer density, light availability and competing vegetation. Northern hardwood stands have the potential to undergo compositional changes if deer densities are not reduced because unpalatable/browse-tolerant species may replace highly browsed species. Results demonstrate that various factors can interrupt the regeneration of even shade tolerant species following canopy gap formation.

## 1.1 Introduction

In forests where stand clearing disturbances occur infrequently, sapling regeneration relies on pulses of resource provided by canopy gaps (Runkle 1985; Yamamoto 2000). Canopy gaps form naturally due to mature tree mortality from old age, windfall, lightning, disease and insects (Krasny and Whitmore 1992), but tree removal from selection harvesting has become the primary mode by which these gaps are created in managed northern hardwood forests. The aim of selection harvesting is to sustain the production of high quality timber by mimicking natural gap dynamics to foster regeneration and by maintaining an uneven-aged structure (Arbogast 1957; Guldin 1996; OMNR 1998). This harvest practice is recommended for northern hardwood forests (Arbogast 1957) because of evidence that it promotes the regeneration of economically valuable shade tolerant species such as sugar maple (*Acer saccharum* Marsh.) (Tubbs 1968) and can facilitate regeneration of shade-intolerant and intermediate species if group selection is used to create larger gaps (Leak 1999).

Abundant natural regeneration of desirable species is essential to the success of the selection system (Nyland 1998). Unimodal size-density stand structures considered unsustainable under selection harvesting (Smith et al 1997) may develop when there are insufficient seedling and sapling populations to recruit into larger size classes and replace the pole and saw-log sized trees removed by harvesting (Nyland 1998). Failure of hardwood species such as sugar maple, yellow birch (*Betula alleghaniensis* Britton), black cherry (*Prunus serotina* Ehrh.) and northern red oak (*Quercus rubra* L.) to germinate or grow into taller sapling layers has been observed in many managed hardwood forests for over half a century in the Midwestern and Northeastern United

States (Stoeckeler et al 1957; Marquis and Brenneman 1981; Jenkins 1997; Aldrich et al 2005; Belden and Pallardy 2009), including in the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan (Graham 1954; Miller 2004; Donovan 2005). Sugar maple is the dominant species in northern hardwood forests, and loss of this species from the understory could dramatically alter future stand composition and structure (Jenkins 1997). Reduced regeneration of commercially important species following selection harvesting causes concern for forest managers who seek to ensure long-term timber production and maintain certification under the Sustainable Forestry Initiative (Donovan 2005). Regeneration failures could jeopardize the sustainability of forest productivity and thus destabilize the economy in areas like the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan where the timber industry is one of the main economic drivers (Racevskis and Lupi 2006). In addition, loss of seedling and sapling layers in hardwood forests have ecological consequences because they serve as forage for species such as white-tailed deer (*Odocoileus virginianus* Zimmermann) (Blouch 1984) and provide vertical stand structure necessary for some bird species (Webb et al 1977; DeGraaf et al 1998).

The abundance and species composition of seedling and sapling layers in harvest gaps are affected by many abiotic and biotic factors that reduce or enhance seed availability, germination, growth and survival. Seed production, light availability, soil nutrients and moisture regime, competition from non-tree understory vegetation, and deer herbivory have been identified as key factors influencing regeneration in northern hardwood forests based on previous studies and field observations (Figure 1.1). This list is not all-inclusive, but highlights those factors hypothesized to have the greatest effects on sugar maple and other common northern hardwood species present in the understory.

Densities of seedlings are initially constrained by the production of seeds. Generally positive relationships between tree size, seed production, and seedling densities (Marquis 1975; Tubbs 1977; Hughes and Fahey 1988; Ribbens et al 1994; Garret and Graber 1995; Fei and Steiner 2008) imply that management decisions regarding the retention of large mature seed trees can impact future regeneration. Once seedlings germinate, availability of soil moisture, nutrients and light affect their growth (Canham and Marks 1985; Canham 1988; Walters and Reich 1997; Finzi and Canham 2000; Bigelow and Canham 2002; Webster and Lorimer 2002; Schreeg et al 2005; Kobe 2006), survival (Caspersen and Kobe 2001; Schreeg et al 2005) and species richness (Tubbs 1977; Runkle 1982; Runkle 1984; Burger and Kotar 2003; Schumann et al 2003). Increasing the size of harvest gaps increases understory light availability (Gray et al 2002; Canham et al 1990), seedling and sapling growth rates (Canham and Marks 1985; Kobe 2006) and cover of non-tree understory vegetation (Collins et al 1985; Schumann et al 2003; Shields and Webster 2007). Shrubs, ferns and graminoids can reduce seedling and sapling densities, survival and height growth (Horsley and Marquis 1983; De Steven 1991; Romagosa and Robison 2003; Fei and Steiner 2008) by altering understory microhabitat conditions (e.g. temperature and light availability) and competing for nutrients (George and Bazzaz 1999) and water (Randall 2007).

Intense browse by white-tailed deer is often cited as the major cause of regeneration failure after harvesting treatments in hardwood forests (Graham 1954; Stoeckeler et al 1957; Shafer et al 1961; Marquis and Brenneman 1981; Cook 2008). Selective browsing and differences in species tolerance to browsing (Augustine and McNaughton 1998) affect the abundance and species richness of understory tree layers

(Stoeckeler et al 1957; Liang and Seagle 2002; Horsley et al 2003; Rooney and Waller 2003; Eschtruth and Battles 2008), occasionally causing the near elimination of highly preferred browse species, such as is the case with eastern hemlock (*Tsuga canadensis* (L.) Carrière) and northern white-cedar (*Thuja occidentalis* L.) in the Great Lakes region (Rooney et al 2000; 2002). By removing palatable species, herbivory can permit the dominance of a few unpalatable, browse resistant / tolerant species (Horsley et al 2003; Cote et al 2004) such as ironwood (*Ostrya virginiana* (Mill.) K. Koch) or beech (*Fagus grandifolia* Ehrh.) (Sage et al 2003; Miller 2004).

This study evaluates the relative impacts of deer density and other gap- and stand-level factors on seedling and sapling layers. It takes advantage of a decreasing gradient in winter deer density with increasing latitude in the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan, caused in part by the southern seasonal migration of deer to avoid deep lake-effect snow (Verme 1973; Doepker et al 1994; VanDeelen et al 1998). The impacts of white-tailed deer on tree regeneration have been the focus of many studies (see reviews- Weisberg and Bugmann 2003; Rooney and Waller 2003; Cote et al 2004), however, few have assessed the relative impact of deer density in conjunction with other gap- and stand-level factors across a large geographic area (Rooney et al 2000; 2002). None have done so for broadly distributed and economically valuable northern hardwood species. Given the suite of factors that affect seedlings and saplings throughout their ontogeny, multivariate assessments at multiple stands across broad geographic areas are critical for determining the relative contributions of different factors and to reduce the risk of assigning significance to factors that are correlated with unmeasured variables.

This study explores the following hypotheses: H1) as winter deer density increases across a landscape-scale gradient, sapling abundance of heavily browsed species such as sugar maple (Swift 1949; Stoeckeler et al 1957) decreases, H2) seedling and sapling abundances, diversity and height growth rates in gaps created by selection harvesting are affected by gap-level seed source availability (+), light availability (+) and cover of competing vegetation (-) and by stand-level soil moisture and nutrient conditions (+) and winter deer density (-) and H3) current understory regeneration may not perpetuate current overstory species composition, due in part to deer browse of palatable species.

## **1.2 Methods**

### ***1.2.1 Study area***

Northern hardwood stands included in this study (n=59 stands) were harvested two to fifteen years ago and located across 475,000 contiguous hectares of Dickinson, Iron, Marquette and Menominee counties in the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan (Figure 1.2; Appendix A, Table A.1). This study area encompasses that for the ongoing Western Upper Peninsula Economic-Ecological Modeling Project that integrates ecology and economics to better understand interactions among deer, tree harvesting and regeneration on managed forest landscapes (Laurent et al 2005; LeBouton et al 2005; Racevskis and Lupi 2006; Millington et al 2009 *in review*). This area was selected for the domination of forest cover, the relative absence of agriculture and urban or suburban developments, and the natural variation in deer densities and snow depth (Doepker et al 1994; Shi et al 2006). All but five stands were dominated by sugar maple in the overstory (43-100% basal area of trees with dbh >20 cm), and had various components of

American basswood (*Tilia americana* L.), red maple (*Acer rubrum* L.), eastern hemlock (*Tsuga canadensis* (L.) Carrière), white ash (*Fraxinus americana* L.), black cherry (*Prunus serotina* Ehrh.), balsam fir (*Abies balsamea* (L.) Mill.), yellow birch (*Betula alleghaniensis* Britton), and other minor coniferous and deciduous species.

Stands ranged in elevation from 283 to 551 m with underlying soils from thirty distinct soil types (Appendix A, Table A.2). Soil drainage varies from very poor to excessive. Annual snow fall varies from 161 cm in the south to 434 cm in the north (National Climatic Data Center 2009) due to lake-effect snow influenced by Lake Superior (Jerome 2006).

### ***1.2.2 Study stand harvest dates***

Harvest dates for all stands were estimated with radial increment analysis of stem cross sections taken from saplings growing in harvest gaps. The harvest date was estimated by the year of release from growth suppression (Webster and Lorimer 2005). Harvest dates estimated from release were strongly correlated with the harvest records available for a subset of seventeen stands (Pearson's  $r = 0.87$ ), with a difference of  $\pm 2$  years (average = -0.4 years).

### ***1.2.3 Field methods***

#### ***1.2.3.a Stand-level variables: Soil moisture and nutrient regime (Habitat Type), deer density, browse pressure and snow depth***

Habitat Type, a proxy for soil moisture and nutrient regime, was determined from diagnostic assemblages of understory vegetation at each stand (Burger and Kotar 2003). Northern hardwood stands in the study area fall into five different Habitat Types (listed from lowest to highest soil nutrient availability): TMC, ATM, ATD, ATD-Hp and AOCa

(Table 1.1). Stand classification into one of these types is not based on sapling abundance or diversity.

Winter deer density was estimated with fecal pellet surveys at each stand in spring 2008 (Hill 2001). Fecal pellet surveys are a fairly simple method of assessing relative local deer density (Hill 2001) with reasonable accuracy (Neff 1968; Forsyth et al 2007, but see Fuller 1991). However, it has been criticized because defecation rates are correlated with forage intake, forage moisture content and percentage of young in the herd and estimates can be biased by sampling design and observer error (Neff 1968). Despite these limitations, no other method can be as readily utilized to determine stand-scale variation in deer density across a large geographic area. Pellet groups were counted along ten 50 m by 4 m transects oriented in an hour glass shape (Appendix B, Section B.1). All transects were double counted with different observers to improve accuracy (Jenkins and Manly 2008). The average pellet group counts from all ten transects were used to calculate deer density following the methods of Hill 2001 (Appendix B, Section B.1). Visible pellets were those above leaf litter deposited in November 2007, so the estimate of deer density corresponds to deer presence in the late fall, winter and early spring months. I term the estimate “winter deer density” although deer depositing fecal pellets in northern hardwood stands likely did so while migrating between summer and winter ranges (i.e. in November and April).

Stand-level sugar maple browse index (SMBI), a surrogate for browse pressure, was estimated by counting the number of browsed and unbrowsed terminal twigs 30-200 cm above the ground on 5- 24 sugar maple saplings 1 to 2.5 m tall (Frelich and Lorimer 1985; Rooney et al 2000). Each sapling was assigned to one of five browse categories

based on the percentage of total twigs browsed (0= no browsing, 1 = 1-25%, 2 = 26-50%, 3= 51-75%, and 4 = 76-100%). Average SMBI was calculated for each of the 25 stands where there were more than 5 sugar maple saplings for which browse index could be determined.

Average daily snow depth (cm) for November 2007 to April 2008 was determined from the National Snow and Ice Data Center's Snow Data Assimilation System (SNODAS) snow mass and energy balance model (Barrett 2003; NOHRSC 2004).

*1.2.3.b Gap-level variables: gap size, light availability, seed production potential, competing vegetation, seedling and sapling abundance and growth rates*

Gap-level variables were quantified within six gaps at each stand, with the exception of five stands where fewer gaps were measured because fewer existed or very high sapling densities made data collection time-intensive. Gaps were defined as canopy openings created by the removal of one or more trees, with the shortest inter-bole diameter of at least ten meters. Gap sizes were estimated using the method of Runkle 1981, i.e. calculated as an ellipse using inter-bole distances between gap edge trees. Gaps were sampled from three size strata (shortest diameter <12.5 m, shortest diameter 12.5-15 m shortest diameter >15 m) when present.

Light availability was estimated from hemispherical photographs (Canham et al 1990; Domke et al 2007) taken at the gap center as well as three meters from the center in each cardinal direction to capture variability in canopy openness. Canopy openness (CO- a proxy for light availability) was estimated from photos converted to binary images using an automatic threshold value (SideLook v. 1.1.01, Nobis 2005) with Gap Light Analyzer software (Frazer et al 1999). The average CO from the usable photos for each

gap was used in analyses. CO was not estimated for ten gaps where three or more of the five photographs were unusable due to sun glare or image obstruction.

Seed production potential (SP) was estimated for each gap by summing the quotient of diameter at breast height (dbh-1.4 m) and the squared distance for each mature tree by species. This method assumes that a tree's contribution to SP increases with diameter and decreases with distance (Ribbens et al 1994). Trees and stumps within 20 meters of the gap plot and with dbh > 5 cm for ironwood (a smaller species at maturity) and > 20 cm for other species were included in this estimate. If the species of a stump could not be determined in the field, it was determined in the laboratory from wood samples (Marx 2005). Stump basal diameter was converted to dbh using relationships developed by Demaerschalk and Omule 1978 (Appendix B, Section B.2). Stumps were not measured at one stand due to the level of decay which made species identification and diameter measurements difficult.

Seed production potential estimates were developed for 2008 ( $SP_{2008}$ ) based on the current dbh of living trees and for the time of harvest ( $SP_{Harvest}$ ) based on stump dbh and "grown back" dbh of living trees. Mature tree dbh was "grown back" to dbh at the time of harvest using radial growth equations from the USDA Forest Vegetation Simulator Lake States Variant (Bush and Brand 1993) (Appendix B, Section B.3).  $SP_{Harvest}$  increases rapidly with the inclusion of large stumps near the gap center.

Percent ground cover of fern, grass and *Carex* spp, *Rubus* spp, and other shrubs was visually estimated in five  $1\text{ m}^2$  quadrats located within each gap. Numbers of tree seedlings (<1 m tall) were tallied by species and height (to the nearest 0.25 m) in two of

the 1 m<sup>2</sup> competing vegetation quadrats located near the gap center. Tree saplings 1-7 m tall were tallied by species and height (to the nearest 0.25 m) in one 154 m<sup>2</sup> gap-centered circular plot (7 m radius). This plot encompassed the entire gap area for smaller gaps, and a large portion of the area for larger gaps. In gaps with extreme sapling densities (> 200 saplings / gap plot), only one forth to three fourths of the gap plot was sampled to improve efficiency, and estimates were scaled up to the entire gap plot.

If saplings were present, stem cross section were taken at 5 cm and breast height from one sugar maple and one ironwood sapling within three different height strata (1-2 m, 2-4 m and >4 m). These species were selected because they were more consistently represented across stands than other species. Sapling age at 5 cm and 1.4 m height was determined (number of rings counted on the cross section plus 0.5 years to account for the current year's growth) in order to estimate height growth rates. Saplings taller than 1.4 m at the time of harvest were excluded from analysis because post-harvest growth rates could not be estimated for them. The average annual height growth rate was determined from 5 cm to the saplings height in 2008 for gap colonizers (saplings with age at 5 cm < time since harvest) and from 1.4 m to the sapling's height for advanced regeneration. A different method was used for advanced regeneration because some height growth below 1.4 m occurred during the period of suppression before harvest. Height growth estimates were adjusted using the method of Carmean 1972 because cross sections did not correspond with terminal bud scars.

#### ***1.2.4 Data analysis: independent variables***

I sought to explore spatial patterns in seedling and sapling abundances, stocking-levels, growth rates, and gap- and stand-level predictor variables, and to develop models

to explain the impacts of these variables on regeneration. I focus analysis on sugar maple and ironwood because they were the most abundant and consistently represented species in the understory. All other species are pooled together as “other” because infrequent observations within species prohibited separate analyses by species. The “other” category is heavily dominated by red maple, white ash and black cherry with these species representing 55%, 26% and 6% of seedlings in the “other category”, 30%, 49% and 12% of saplings 1-2 m tall and 30%, 44% and 15% of saplings 1-7 m tall. Four size categories of regeneration are analyzed: 1) seedlings (< 1 m tall), 2) small saplings that are within the range of deer browse (1-2 m tall), 3) all saplings (1-7 m tall) and 4) a measure of sapling stocking that takes into account densities and heights of saplings.

Comparing sapling abundance alone does not estimate the potential of the sapling pool in a gap to recruit into the overstory because self thinning causes fewer larger saplings to persist over time (Tubbs 1968; Runkle 1984; Kittredge and Ashton 1995; Ray et al 1999). To estimate the stocking level of each gap, I weighted each sapling by the inverse of the maximum observed gap-level density for saplings of that height across all gaps (Figure 1.3) and summed the weights of all saplings in a gap by species. If a gap was at the maximum density for a sapling size class, it had a stocking level of 1 (i.e. 100%), however, many gaps had multiple cohorts of saplings so the stocking level was > 1. One gap with an outlying stocking level (>14) was removed from analyses for sugar maple and another from the analyses of other species (stocking level > 7). Analyses for sapling stocking by species were performed for gaps where the stocking level for that species was > 0.

Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ) was calculated for seedlings, small saplings (1-2 m) and all saplings (1-7 m). Shannon Diversity Index analyses were only performed for gaps where  $H'$  was  $> 0$  for that size class.

To improve normality, sapling stocking and sapling post-harvest growth rates were log transformed and  $H'$  was square root transformed.

#### ***1.2.5 Data analysis: statistical analysis***

The data were hierarchically structured, with gaps nested within stands, so a hierarchical multilevel modeling approach was taken for analysis. Ignoring the relatedness between gaps within stands would increase the risk of type I errors because the effective sample size is really less than the total number of gaps (Goldstein 1995; Congdon 2003). Multilevel models incorporate information about the clustering to produce estimates of standard errors that account for non-independence (Goldstein 1995). I used Bayesian inference with Markov chain Monte Carlo (MCMC) sampling to estimate parameter values and obtain credible intervals that average over the uncertainty in fixed- and random-effect parameters (Zhao et al 2006; Bolker et al 2009).

Multilevel models were not used for sapling growth rate analyses because preliminary analyses using the lme4 package (Bates and Maechler 2009) in R 2.9.1 (R Development Core Team 2009) demonstrated that inclusion of a stand-level random intercept did not improve model fit (AIC = 1.68 vs 52.44 for sugar maple and 12.74 vs 62.71 for ironwood linear versus multilevel linear models with all gap- and stand-level covariates). This is likely because variation in growth rates for saplings within the same stand was comparable to variation between all saplings (average within-stand stdev= 0.062 cm vs overall stdev=0.077 cm for sugar maple and 0.086 cm vs 0.099 for

ironwood) and there were many stands (4 of 27 for sugar maple and 10 of 30 for ironwood) where growth rate after harvest could only be determined for one sapling. Non-linear effects in the relationship between sapling height and height growth were not included because it appeared linear over the range of observed heights.

*1.2.5.a Assessing spatial patterns in regeneration (H1) and modeling the effect of gap- and stand-level factors (H2)*

Spatial trend models (UTM Northing and Easting as covariates), full models (gap- and stand-level covariates) and null models (overall intercept and random stand-level intercepts only) were developed using generalized linear multilevel models for seedling and sapling abundance, linear multilevel models for log transformed sapling stocking level and square root transformed H' and linear models for log transformed sapling growth rates. Seedling and sapling abundances were modeled as negative binomial processes arising from the distribution  $\sim \text{NegBin}(p, r)$  where  $p = r / (r + \mu)$  and  $r$  (the dispersion parameter)  $= \mu^2 / (\sigma^2 - \mu)$ . Table 1.2 shows the formulation for the spatial trend, full and null models and lists the covariates used for each analysis.

UTM Easting and Northing were rescaled from 0 to 1 for the spatial trend models, and gap- and stand-level parameters for the full models were standardized to improve convergence. Percent ground cover of fern, grass and *Carex* spp, *Rubus* spp, and other shrubs were added together to create a composite metric, percent cover of competing vegetation, to reduce the number of parameters and because these variables were auto-correlated. SP<sub>2008</sub> was used in seedling abundance models and H' of overstory trees in seedling H' models because it was unlikely that trees represented by stumps were the seed source for small seedlings except at the most recently harvested stands.

### *1.2.5.b Model fitting, priors and convergence*

Models, including the linear growth rate models, were run with WinBUGS v.1.4.3 (Spiegelhalter et al 2003) (see code Appendix C, Section C.1- C.3) through R v.2.9.1 with the package R2WinBUGS (Sturtz et al 2005) (see code Appendix C, Section C.5). Three parallel chains with dispersed randomly selected starting values were run for 70,000 iterations with a burn-in of 10,000 and a thinning rate of 5 for seedling and sapling abundance and H' models, and for 20,000 iterations with a burn-in of 5,000 and a thinning rate of 1 for stocking level and growth rate models. Some models had to be run for longer iterations and with a higher thinning rate to improve convergence (Appendix D, Tables D.1-D.8). AOCa and ATD-Hp Habitat Types were combined into one group for sugar maple sapling abundance models because low variation within and between these groups affected identifiability (the ability to estimate all parameters in the model).

Deviance Information Criterion (DIC), a method of assessing model performance in terms of fit and complexity based on the posterior mean deviance ( $-2 \times \log(\text{likelihood})$ ) and the effective number of parameters (Spiegelhalter et al 2002), was compared for the spatial trend models, full models and null models to determine if predictor variables improved model performance. A decrease in DIC by 5 or more indicates support for better model performance.

In multilevel models, a group's (i.e. stand's) random intercept is adjusted by the group's deviation from the predicted value, so predictions can closely fit observed data. This is especially the case when few observations are made within groups and variation is low within groups. The null model predictions could perfectly fit all gap-level observations at a stand where variation between gaps was zero. Improvements in model

fit over the null model demonstrate the ability of gap- and stand-level covariates to explain variation between and within stands given the deviation of each stand from the mean. If DIC is lower for the null model than a model with covariates, it indicates that relative to other unmeasured differences that might exist between stands, differences cannot be attributable to covariates.

A uniform prior (range 0-50) was used for the standard deviation of the random stand-level intercept for all multilevel models. The random effects standard deviation was insensitive to prior specification (Appendix B; Section B.4). An inverse gamma prior was used for the sapling-level precision in the sapling growth rate linear models. A noninformative prior distribution ( $\text{Normal}(\mu=0, \sigma^2=10,000)$ ) was used for gap-level and stand-level coefficients (Clark 2007; Bolker et al 2009).

Convergence was diagnosed using the R package coda (Plummer et al 2009) with the Gelman-Rubin diagnostic and the Raftery-Lewis diagnostic. All models showed strong evidence of convergence (Appendix D, Tables D.1-D.8).

#### *1.2.5.c Comparing the effect of significant gap- and stand-level variables*

Simulations were used to predict the effect of a one standard deviation increase in gap- and stand-level variables on sugar maple small sapling abundance to determine the relative effect of significant variables, and to aid in the biological interpretation of model parameter values. Predictions were developed using one-to-one simulation draws from the posterior parameter distributions. Simulations for small sugar maple sapling abundance were run for 1) the gap with the greatest observed sugar maple abundance holding all covariates at their observed values and 2) a gap at an unmeasured stand where the covariate values were at the mean level observed across the study area. Method 1

incorporates less uncertainty into the predictions because the posterior distribution for the random stand-level effect for the observed stand can be used (Gelman and Hill 2007).

#### *1.2.5.d Assessing spatial patterns in gap- and stand-level variables*

Linear regression with nonparametric pairs bootstrapping was used to explore spatial trends in stand-level variables and stand averages of gap-level variables.

Nonparametric Kruskal-Wallis rank sum test was used to determine if Easting and Northing were significantly different between Habitat Types, and compared between Habitat Types with nonparametric Wilcoxon signed-rank test with Bonferroni adjusted p-values.

#### *1.2.5.e Potential species composition changes (H3)*

Future forest composition can change if saplings regenerating in harvest gaps are of different species than those that were removed from the gap (Runkle 1981). The potential for species change was assessed with two methods: 1) determining the percentage of gaps where a species was removed by harvesting (i.e. present as a stump in the gap) and also present in the sapling layer and 2) comparing the percentage of gaps where a species was the dominant species removed (highest relative stump basal area) to the percentage of gaps where that species dominated the sapling layer (highest relative sapling stocking level). These analyses only used gaps from stands that had been harvested at least eight years before data collection because younger gap may require more time to accumulate all possible sapling species. The first analysis only included species represented by stumps in at least 5 gaps and the second analysis combines species other than sugar maple and ironwood into the “other” category.

## **1.3 Results**

### ***1.3.1 Characterizing regeneration abundance and composition***

A total of 18 species were identified as saplings (1-7m tall) within gaps across the study area, but regeneration was heavily dominated by sugar maple and ironwood (Table 1.3). Only six species occurred in more than 5 percent of the gap plots (ironwood, sugar maple, black cherry, white ash, red maple and balsam fir), and only ironwood and sugar maple occurred in more than 50% of all gap plots. Twelve percent of gap plots were devoid of saplings of any species and 35% had less than five stems of all species combined ( $< 325$  saplings / ha of gap area). Sugar maple was absent from 48% of gap plots and ironwood from 43%.

Species richness and diversity were low, with a median number of two tree species in the seedling layer, two in the sapling layer and three in the overstory layer. The maximum observed number of species was five in the seedling layer, seven in the sapling layer and seven in the overstory layer. Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ) was 0.31 for seedlings with a maximum of 1.46, 0.35 for saplings with a maximum of 1.48 and 0.58 for overstory trees with a maximum of 1.60. The maximum possible  $H'$  is 1.61 with five species and 1.95 with seven species.

Percentage of sugar maple and ironwood saplings originating as gap colonizers decreased with increasing height (Table 1.4). The tallest gap colonizer was 2.75 m for sugar maple (7 years old at a stand harvested 7 years ago) and 2.5 m for ironwood (9 years old at a stand harvested 9 years ago). The average age (number of growth rings at 5 cm height) of advanced regeneration at the time of gap formation for sugar maple was 16 years (stdev 14.4 years) and 9 years (stdev 8.0 years) for ironwood.

Average post-harvest growth rates for saplings 1-2 m tall were not significantly different between ironwood (0.19 m / yr, stdev 0.06) and sugar maple (0.18 m / yr, 0.07), but growth rate for ironwood (0.29 m / yr, 0.10) was significantly faster than that for sugar maple saplings 2-4 m tall (0.24 m / yr, 0.07). The growth rate for ironwood 4-7 m tall (0.42 m / yr, 0.07) was higher than the growth rate of the two tall sugar maple saplings for which post-harvest growth could be calculated (0.24 m / yr).

### ***1.3.2 Characterization of gap and stand-level variables***

Harvest gaps were created by the removal of three trees (dbh > 20 cm) on average, but as few as one and as many as thirteen, and ranged in extended gap size from 82 to 913 m<sup>2</sup> (Table 1.5). Positive correlations were observed between canopy openness and gap size and cover of competing vegetation (Table 1.6). Canopy openness, cover of competing vegetation and estimated deer density were negatively correlated with time since harvest. Estimated winter deer density was on average 13.9 deer/ km<sup>2</sup>, ranging from 0.6 to 61.6 deer/ km<sup>2</sup>, and was negatively correlated with snow depth. Stand average sugar maple browse index was positively correlated with time since harvest but not with deer density estimates.

Habitat Types were well represented (n > 10 stands) except for TMC (n = 2). Snow depth was deeper on ATD and ATM types compared to ATD-Hp (Table 1.7). Stand average percent cover of ferns, grass and *Carex* spp and SP<sub>Harvest</sub> for other species were the only other variables differing between Habitat Types. If TMC was excluded from the Kruskal-Wallis rank sum test due to low sample size, percent cover of *Rubus* spp and sugar maple SP<sub>Harvest</sub> were significantly different between the remaining four Habitat

Types ( $\chi^2=8.27$ ,  $df=3$ ,  $p\text{-value}=0.04$  and  $\chi^2=9.69$ ,  $df=3$ ,  $p\text{-value}=0.02$  respectively).

However, no pairwise comparisons between Habitat Types were significant for cover of *Rubus* spp.  $SP_{\text{Harvest}}$  for sugar maple was significantly higher on ATD type stands than on ATD-Hp, even though  $SP_{2008}$  was not. This may be due to the larger number of sugar maple stumps harvested from the area around gaps at ATD stands compared to ATD-Hp (9.6 stumps vs 6.5 stumps, Wilcoxon rank sum test  $W=131.5$ ,  $p=0.045$ ).

### ***1.3.3 Spatial patterns in regeneration and gap- and stand-level variables (H1)***

Spatial trends in abundance were evident for all species groups in either seedling or sapling size classes as well as for seedlings and saplings H' (Table 1.8). Sugar maple showed the most consistent and strongest spatial trends, increasing with UTM Northing for seedling and sapling abundance, sapling stocking levels and growth rates. Sugar maple small sapling abundance was dramatically different between 163 gap plots across 28 stands located south of latitude 46° 6'43" N and 184 gap plots across 31 stands north of this latitude (Figure 1.4). Small sugar maple saplings were present in only 4% of gap plots in southern stands, with a total abundance of eight saplings in the 163 gaps, but were present in 71% of gap plots in the northern stands with abundances as great as 387 saplings in a single gap plot (25,140 saplings / ha of gap area). Consistently low abundance of ironwood (Figure 1.5) and other species (Figure 1.6) were not observed across stands in the southern region. Ironwood and other species small saplings were present in 54% and 39% of southern gap plots with abundances as high as 127 and 242 / gap plot (8,250 and 15,721 / hectare of gap area), respectively.

Although spatial patterns were evident in many models, very few showed signs of improved performance (lower DIC) over the null model (random stand-level intercept

only). Due to few gap observations per stand, the stand-level intercept is able to explain much of the variation in the observations.

Snow depth increased with Northing and marginally decreased with Easting, whereas SMBI and estimated winter deer density decreased with Northing and Easting (Table 1.9). Stand average percent cover of competing vegetation decreased with Easting. Spatial trends were also observed in competing vegetation and seed production potential for sugar maple and ironwood. Sugar maple  $SP_{\text{Harvest}}$  increased with Northing, even though  $SP_{2008}$  did not, because more sugar maple stumps were removed from northern stands in the most recent harvest. Easting was significantly different between Habitat Types (Kruskal-Willis  $\chi^2 = 18.07$ ,  $df=4$ ,  $p\text{-value}=0.001$ ) as was Northing (Kruskal-Willis  $\chi^2 = 33.63$ ,  $df=4$ ,  $p\text{-value}<0.001$ ), with ATD stands generally located farther east than AOCa, and ATD and ATM located farther north than AOCa and ATD-Hp (Figure 1.7).

#### ***1.3.4 Gap- and stand- level variables affecting seedling and sapling abundance, sapling stocking, sapling growth rates and regeneration diversity (H2)***

All measured gap- and stand-level factors significantly corresponded with at least one species or species category in the seedling abundance (Figure 1.8), sapling abundance (Figure 1.9) or sapling stocking levels (Figure 1.10) models.

At the gap-level, cover of competing vegetation had a consistent negative association with seedling and sapling abundance and stocking. Canopy openness was positively associated with small sapling abundance and stocking levels of sugar maple and other species. Seed production potential was only positively associated with ironwood seedling abundance.

Stand-level Habitat Type was consistently important in the full multilevel models, especially for sugar maple where higher seedling and sapling abundances and stocking levels were found in gap plots on ATD, ATM and TMC type stands compared to AOCa and ATD-Hp. There was only one sugar maple sapling 1-2 m tall across all 85 gaps measured on ATD-Hp stands. Differences between Habitat Types were not observed for ironwood and other species small saplings, however specific species within the other species group showed variation in sapling abundances between Habitat Types. No white ash saplings (1-7 m tall) were found in gap plots on ATM type stands and only one sapling was found across gap plots on ATD type stands. Stand-level time since harvest was negatively associated with ironwood seedling abundance and estimated deer density was negatively associated with small sugar maple saplings abundance.

The incorporation of gap- and stand-level variables improved model performance (reduced DIC compared to the null model) for all sugar maple models, for ironwood seedling and sapling stocking-level models (marginally), and for the other species sapling abundance model (Table 1.10). Comparison of the observed versus mean posterior predicted values for the sapling abundance models (Figure 1.11) demonstrates that the stand-level intercept explained much of the variation, not the covariates. The stand-level intercept provided the model with the ability to predict gaps with zero seedlings or saplings per gap plot, but incorporation of gap- and stand-level effects improved its ability to predict gaps with higher abundances for sugar maple and other species.

Diversity of seedlings, small saplings and all saplings was mostly insensitive to measured gap- and stand-level variables (Figure 1.12). The Shannon Diversity Index of overstory trees increased seeding diversity, and diversity appeared lower on ATD

compared to AOCa type stands across size classes. The incorporation of gap- and stand-level covariates only improved model performance for the seedling diversity model (Table 1.10).

Sapling post-harvest growth rates increased with height and decreased with time since harvest for both species, but were insensitive to the other gap- and stand-level variables except for marginal increases in ironwood growth rate with canopy openness (Figure 1.13). Sapling growth rates post-harvest for sugar maple and ironwood were lower for advanced regeneration saplings compared to gap colonizers at a given height (Figure 1.14). Model performance was greatly improved with inclusion of sapling-, gap- and stand-level variables (Table 1.10).

#### ***1.3.5 Predicting the effect of significant gap- and stand-level variables on sugar maple abundance***

Generalized linear mixed model parameter estimates were used to predict sapling abundance for the gap with the highest observed sugar maple small sapling abundance (387 saplings in a gap plot (25,140 / ha of gap area)) and monitor changes in abundance when significant covariates were increased by one standard deviation. With covariates held at their observed values, the median predicted abundance was 146 / gap plot (9,484 / ha of gap area) (95% credible interval for the prediction: 11-731 /gap plot; 715 – 47,487 / ha). The most dramatic change in predicted sapling abundance was elicited by changing the Habitat Type classification from ATM to AOCa/ATD-Hp; predicted sapling abundance declined to 0 / gap plot (0-2 / gap plot; 0-130 / ha) (Figure 1.15). Increasing winter deer density from the observed value by 1 standard deviation (4 to 16 deer/km<sup>2</sup>) decreased the prediction to 40 / gap plot (2,598 / ha) (2-315 / gap plot; 130-22,801 / ha),

increasing canopy openness from 5% to 12% increased the prediction to 193 / gap plot (12,538 / ha) (14-972 / gap plot; 909-63,142 / ha), and increasing competing vegetation from 18% to 41% decreased the prediction to 124 / gap plot (8,055 / ha) (6-451 / gap plot; 390 – 29,298 / ha).

Uncertainty in parameter estimates, and the importance of the random stand-level intercept for constraining predictions, reduced the model's ability to predict sapling abundance for gaps at an unmeasured stand (Figure 1.16). Median predictions of sugar maple abundance within a gap at an unmeasured stand were all below 10 / gap plot (650 / ha). Due to similarities between the response of abundance to ATD, ATM and TMC Habitat Types, only results from a simulated gap at an ATD type stand are presented for comparison with predictions of abundance at an AOCa/ATD-Hp type stand. Predictions were consistently higher for ATD compared to AOCa/ATD-Hp, and more variable for ATD. The median predicted sapling abundance for gaps on AOCa/ATD-Hp type stands remained at 0 regardless of changing covariate values.

### ***1.3.6 Potential species composition changes***

The percentage of gaps where a species was harvested and at least one sapling of the same species was present varied from 7% for conifer species (n=14 gaps) to 100% for ironwood (n=10) (Figure 1.17). About fifty percent of gaps with sugar maple (n=191), white ash (n=6) or red maple stumps (n=21) had saplings of that species present. Although yellow birch and basswood were removed from 20 and 24 gaps respectively, there were only saplings of these species in about 10% of these gaps.

Sugar maple was the dominant species (highest relative basal area) of stumps removed from 74% of gaps, but only the dominant sapling species (highest relative

stocking level) in 37% of 211 gaps harvested 8-15 years ago (Figure 1.18). Ironwood rarely had the highest relative stump basal area, but was the dominant sapling species in 32% of gaps. Other species were the dominant stump species and the dominant sapling species in about 20% of gaps. Eleven percent of gaps had no regenerating saplings.

#### **1.4 Discussion**

Exploring multiple factors across multiple scales is fundamental for elucidating the complexity of ungulate-vegetation interactions (Rooney and Waller 2003; Weisberg and Bugmann 2003) and the causes of regeneration failure (Didier and Porter 2003; Romagosa and Robison 2003; Sage et al 2003). This study responded to this need by characterizing abiotic and biotic variables operating at the landscape-, stand- and gap-scales (Figure 1.1), and their effects on regeneration dynamics in the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan.

High variation was observed in the abundance of seedlings and saplings in gap plots, with some plots full of saplings but most containing very few. Gap plots were equivalent to the size of the growing space created by the removal of several mature trees, and many sampled gaps were over the minimum size ( $100\text{--}400\text{ m}^2$ ) required for the regeneration of shade-intolerant species (Webster and Lorimer 2005). The absence of any sapling species from over ten percent of gap plots, the absence of shade-tolerant sugar maple from fifty percent of gap plots, and the near complete absence of shade-intolerant species from all gap plots implies regeneration failure in many stands.

Sugar maple sapling abundance increased with latitude where snow depth was greater, winter deer densities were lower (H1), and less nutrient rich Habitat Types were more abundant. All measured gap- and stand-level variables were associated with

changes in seedling and/or sapling abundance in selection harvest gaps (H2). I found evidence that shifts in species composition are possible in some northern hardwood stands (H3), potentially due to species sensitivities to gap- and stand-level variables. There was less evidence of gap- and stand-level variables affecting seedling and sapling diversity and sapling growth rates.

#### ***1.4.1. Inverse landscape-scale gradients in biotic and abiotic factors and sugar maple sapling abundance (H1)***

Snow depth increases with latitude in this region due to lake-effect snow. White-tailed deer avoid areas with deep snow (Tierson et al 1985; Poole and Mowat 2005) and migrate south to winter range where snow depth is lower (Verme 1973; VanDeelen et al 1998). Decreasing winter deer density with UTM Northing and Easting (Figure 1.19) has been documented across the study area for at least half a century (Doepker et al 1994).

Snowfall patterns also help account for the distribution of mesic forest communities in the Great Lakes region, potentially because snow cover impacts soil moisture, nutrient availability and fire history (Henne et al 2007). The landscape-scale gradient in winter deer density and Habitat Types, as influenced by snow depth, may account for the spatial pattern of increasing sugar maple seedling and sapling abundance with Northing and Easting. Sugar maple seed production potential at the time of harvest also increased with Northing, but sugar maple still dominated the overstories of stands in the southern portion of the study area. The sapling spatial trend does not reflect a spatial trend in the range of sugar maple.

Deer density was not correlated with spatial patterns in sugar maple sapling abundance in northern New York State (Didier and Porter 2003), but in the Western

Upper Peninsula of Michigan the spatial pattern in winter deer density is inverse that for sugar maple sapling abundance. Sugar maple saplings are heavily utilized as forage (Swift 1949; Stoeckeler et al 1957) and decline in abundance outside deer exclosures (Stoeckeler et al 1957; Miller 2004). Deer browse in the southern portion of the Western Upper Peninsula may affect the perpetuation of sugar maple following selection harvesting.

Confounding the north to south gradient in deer density is a gradient in Habitat Types. Sugar maple seedling and sapling abundance and sapling stocking levels differ between Habitat Types (Figure 1.20), being more abundant on ATD, ATM and TMC (less-nutrient rich Habitat Types). Abundances of other species and ironwood also differ between Habitat Types, but not to the extent of sugar maple. In the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan, variation in snow depth between Habitat Types, and the associated impacts of snow on soil moisture-nutrient conditions, may account for some of the abundance of sugar maple saplings observed on ATD, ATM and TMC stands with coarser-textured substrates (Henne et al 2007), but it cannot account for the paucity of saplings on AOCa and ATD-Hp stands with finer-textured substrates. Other evidence also points against the strength of the Habitat Type soil moisture and nutrient regime effect on sugar maple sapling abundance: 1) differences in sapling growth rates between Habitat Types, that could indicate differences in soil moisture and nutrient availability (Walters and Reich 1997), were not observed, 2) the Habitat Types with lowest sugar maple abundance are predicted to be most nutrient-rich and 3) differences in sugar maple seedling abundance between Habitat Types were not as strong as differences in sapling

abundance, potentially because deer browse is interrupting the transition from seedling to sapling.

Quantifying the availability of soil resources previously found to affect sugar maple seedlings (i.e soil moisture, pH, nitrogen, concentrations of exchangeable aluminum and calcium) (Walters and Reich 1997; Kobe et al 2002; Juice et al 2006) between and within Habitat Types in this area could help disentangle the effects of Habitat Types from that of deer. At the same time, habitat-suitability of forest stands for deer has been found to vary among Habitat Types (Felix et al 2004), so interactions between deer and Habitat Type might innately interweave their impacts on regeneration.

***1.4.2. Multiple gap- and stand-level factors inhibit or enhance seedling and sapling abundance and stocking levels, but few seem to affect diversity and growth rates (H2)***

Seedling abundance appears more sensitive to gap- and stand-level variables than sapling abundance or stocking-levels. Seedlings have experienced less variation in gap and stand-level conditions since germination compared to the older taller saplings, potentially linking their abundance more closely to the condition of variables measured in 2008. Results from the small sapling abundance and stocking-level models were similar because small saplings were also included in the stocking-level model, but they were weighted less than taller saplings. Stocking-level models also did not include gaps with zero saplings. Results of the stocking-level analysis, therefore, indicate variables that affect the recruitment potential of a gap (i.e. Habitat Type, competing vegetation and canopy openness) given there is some regeneration. The sapling abundance models demonstrate impacts to smaller saplings within the range of deer browse, including impacts contributing to instances when no small saplings are present. These instances

represent regeneration failure in the small size class. Many of these saplings germinated after harvest and are directly impacted by silvicultural decisions.

Evidence was found for impacts of abiotic and biotic gap- and stand-scale factors on seedling and sapling abundance. The relative effect of Habitat Type on predicted sugar maple sapling abundance was the greatest, followed by deer density. Habitat Type and deer density are spatially confounded, reducing the model's ability to represent the relative effect of one variable in isolation of the other. Estimated deer density did not differ significantly between Habitat Types, but uncertainty in pellet count estimates could contribute to this.

Gap-level canopy openness and cover of competing vegetation had weaker impacts on sugar maple sapling abundance than stand-level factors, but effects were in the direction predicted. Previous work corroborates my findings that increasing light increases sapling abundance (Schumann et al 2003; Dietze and Clark *in prep*; Runkle 1982), and increasing cover of non-tree vegetation negatively impacts seedling and sapling layers (Horsley and Marquis 1983; De Steven 1991; George and Bazzaz 1999; Romagosa and Robison 2003; Fei and Steiner 2008). The negative association of cover of competing vegetation with seedling and sapling abundance could also be contributed to by the negative effect taller saplings have on non-tree vegetation (Collins et al 1985). However, controlled field experiments have found direct negative impacts of competing vegetation cover on seedling emergence and seedling and sapling survival and growth rates (Yawney and Carl Jr. 1970; Horsley and Marquis 1983; George and Bazzaz 1999; Randall 2007).

Seed production did not appear to limit the abundance of understory regeneration, except for ironwood seedlings. This was surprising given that seed density, and occasionally seedling density, in forest soils show increases with the abundance, size and proximity of mature seed trees in the overstory (Marquis 1975; Ribbens et al 1994; Garret and Graber 1995; Shibata and Nakashizuka 1995; Clark et al 1998). High inter-annual variation in sugar maple seed crop production, seed viability and seed predation (Graber and Leak 1992; Houle 1992; Garret and Graber 1995) may uncouple overstory tree size and distances from gap-level seedling and sapling abundances. Disconnect may also be observed between seed fall and seedling abundance due to different spatial and temporal patterns in mortality factors (e.g. predation, pathogen attack and competition) affecting seeds and seedlings (Houle 1992).

Seedling and sapling diversity and growth rate were not strongly associated with gap- and stand-level factors in these northern hardwood stands. Understory tree layer species diversity did not increase with canopy openness (based on the full  $H'$  models). Some studies report similar observation (Shields et al 2007; Dietze and Clark *in prep*) but others report diversity or richness responses to light availability (Runkle 1982; Webster and Lorimer 2002; Schumann et al 2003). The lack of a diversity response to light in this study may be partly attributable to the exclusion of gaps with only 1 species (and therefore  $H'=0$ ) from analyses to comply with normality assumptions. The correlation between canopy openness in isolation of other gap- and stand-level variables (and ignoring autocorrelation between gaps sampled from the same stand) is positively related to small sapling  $H'$  (Kendall's  $\tau=10.9$ ,  $p\text{-value}=0.01$ ) and all sapling  $H'$  ( $\tau=14.6$ ,  $p\text{-value}<0.001$ ) for gaps where at least one sapling was present (i.e. including those with

$H'=0$ ). Canopy openness remained non-significant for seedling  $H'$  ( $\tau=-0.05$ ,  $p\text{-value}=0.3$ ). Understory seedling diversity appears more limited by overstory diversity than light availability. However, overstory  $H'$  did not translate into sapling  $H'$ , potentially because some species germinate but do not survive and grow into larger size classes (Metzger and Tubbs 1971).

Canopy openness did not affect sugar maple sapling post-harvest growth rates, and only marginally affected ironwood growth rates. Light estimates from 2008 do not approximate light availability at the time of gap formation due to canopy coalescence (Domke et al 2007), which could weaken light vs. growth rate relationships. Extended gap size, which would not change with time since harvest, was not correlated with sugar maple growth ( $\tau=-0.04$ ,  $p\text{-value}=0.56$ ), but it was positively correlated with ironwood growth ( $\tau=0.18$ ,  $p\text{-value}=0.01$ ). Other studies indicate that sapling height growth responses to light saturate beyond relatively low light levels (Canham 1988; Coates 2000; Webster and Lorimer 2002). This causes significant differences to be observed between height growth below a closed canopy and below canopy gaps, but not between gaps of different sizes (Canham 1988; Webster and Lorimer 2002).

Sapling growth rates only responded strongly to time since harvest out of all gap- and stand-level variables. Others have found sugar maple height growth to slow about 23 years after gap formation (McClure et al 2000) but I find evidence of this effect beginning earlier because all sampled gaps were less than 15 years old.

Gap colonizer saplings had faster growth rates than advanced regeneration of the same height, consistent with previous findings (McClure et al 2000; Webster and Lorimer 2005). Physiological differences between gap colonizer and advanced regeneration,

mediated by years of suppression in advanced regeneration saplings, could lead to differences in post-harvest growth rates. However, the differences observed in this study may also be contributed to by differences in the growth rate estimation technique. Post-harvest growth rates obtained using the advanced regeneration method (average growth rate above 1.4 m tall) were slower than those using the method for gap colonizers (height divided by age) by 0.02 to 0.08 m / year (average 0.05 m / yr) for fifteen of the nineteen gap colonizer saplings tall enough to obtain reasonable cross sections at breast height. Growth rates for the remaining four species were faster using the advanced regeneration method by 0.01 to 0.11 m / year (average 0.04).

#### ***1.4.3. Potential for species composition changes due to replacement by other species following gap creation***

Shade intolerant species like yellow birch, deer browse-preferred species like basswood, and conifers species are not regenerating in gaps where these species were removed by harvesting. Failure of shade intolerant species to regenerate in stands managed with selection silviculture is a common concern in northern hardwood management (Metzger and Tubbs 1971; Shields et al 2007). Loss of conifers (i.e. eastern hemlock, northern white cedar, balsam fir and white spruce) from hardwood forests has implications for forest diversity because conifers provide habitat and food for many songbird species (Kendeigh 1945; Patmos 1995). Others have found negative effects of deer density on sapling H' (Horsley et al 2003; Cote et al 2004; Miller 2004), but I found no evidence of this in the full small sapling H' models. However, when considered in isolation of other variables (and including gaps with only one species), small sapling H' is negatively correlated with estimated deer density (Kendall's  $\tau = -0.17$ ,  $p\text{-value} < 0.001$ ).

Shade tolerant sugar maple failed to regenerate in many gaps created by the harvest removal of overstory sugar maple trees, and could be replaced by other species especially in the southern portion of the study area. Ironwood was the most likely successors in many gaps. Although sugar maple trees could potentially overtop ironwood saplings after many years due to the smaller stature of mature ironwood, sugar maple saplings (1-7 m tall) were absent from 88% of gaps where sugar maple was removed and ironwood saplings dominated the gap plot. Ironwood is a small species at maturity, which could account for the infrequency with which it was observed as the dominant stump species. However, it was only removed from 10 gaps so the frequency with which it was the most dominant sapling species is greater than would be expected if species composition were remaining static. Ironwood saplings were unresponsive to gap- and stand-level variables, indicating that this species has the potential to regenerate across all Habitat Types, regardless of seed source, light availability, competing vegetation cover and deer densities. The potential for ironwood to increase in dominance in areas with high winter deer densities is corroborated by evidence from deer exclosure studies (Miller 2004). Replacement of commercially valuable sugar maple by the non-valuable ironwood, and the general loss of species diversity in northern hardwood stands, are concerning to forest managers (Miller 2004).

#### ***1.4.4. Management implications***

Observations of sugar maple sapling (1-7 m tall) absence from nearly fifty percent of gap plots challenges the notion that “securing some sort of commercially important natural regeneration is usually a simple matter in most northern hardwood stands” (Tubbs 1977), especially for stands located in the southern portion of the Western Upper

Peninsula. Although early work on selection harvesting in the region supports this statement (Eyre and Zillgitt 1953), increasing deer density across the area since the 1970's (Doepker et al 1994) and the potential unsuitability of selection harvesting for securing regeneration on different Habitat Types may affect the ability to apply this technique ubiquitously across northern hardwood stands.

The Michigan Department of Natural Resources is using the Burger and Kotar 2003 Habitat Type system to classify stands and direct management practices. I found significant differences in regeneration abundance between Habitat Types, potentially lending support to stratifying forest management by Habitat Type. Based on the current northern hardwood management recommendations, ATD-Hp type stands are treated equivalent to ATD, but my research suggests that these types should be treated separately because sugar maple regeneration success between these Habitat Types was vastly dissimilar. Specific recommendations may need to be developed for managing AOCa and ATD-Hp type stands in areas with high deer density. Shelterwood cutting has been suggested as a successful alternative to selection harvesting in areas experiencing herbivory-mediate regeneration failure (Sage et al 2003; Marquis and Brenneman 1981). The development of Habitat Type-specific recommendations could facilitate ecosystem management by coordinating appropriate silvicultural techniques with considerations of deer habitat-potential (Felix et al 2004).

Creating larger harvest gaps may produce moderate increases in seedling and sapling abundance, but across the range of gap sizes observed, I find limited evidence that larger gaps increase sapling diversity. Gap size and light availability were positively correlated with cover of competing vegetation, which in turn was negatively associated

with seedling and sapling abundance. I was unable to identify the ideal gap size past which increased light may hinder regeneration by facilitating competing vegetation due to high variation in light availability, sapling abundance and cover of competing vegetation within gaps of the same size class.

The results suggest that removal of competing vegetation may be necessary to ensure successful regeneration (Romagosa and Robison 2003; Horsley and Marquis 1983). Significant increases in height and radial growth were only observed in sugar maple seedlings protected from both competing vegetation and deer herbivory (Yawney and Carl Jr. 1970). Reducing densities of advanced regeneration ironwood may also benefit other species by reducing competition for light and soil nutrients. Results also highlight the importance of avoiding damage to well-formed advanced regeneration sugar maple; few saplings > 2.5 m were gap colonizers, and advanced regeneration has a higher chance of gap capture due to its stature (McClure et al 2000; Cole and Lorimer 2005).

White-tailed deer browsing had stronger effects on sugar maple sapling abundance than light or competing vegetation, so attention should be devoted to quality deer management that maintains populations in balance with their habitat (Frawley 2005). This management approach could strike a balance between deer and forest resources enjoyed by people in the Western Upper Peninsula. Targeted deer harvests that reduce local densities could allow seedlings and saplings an opportunity to outgrow the browse line (Sage et al 2003). Deer harvests may be more successful at improving sugar maple regeneration in the southern portion of the Western Upper Peninsula if regulations are altered to permit hunting during the winter months when deer yard in their winter range.

## 1.5 Conclusion

Lake Superior may play a strong role in the regeneration failure of sugar maple saplings observed in the southern portion of the study area. Lake-effect snow leads to the southern migration of many deer to their winter range, and may contribute to a gradient in soil moisture and nutrient conditions. Sugar maple abundance was lower in areas with lower snow depth, higher deer densities and less nutrient rich Habitat Types. Habitat Types appear to have the greatest impact on sugar maple small sapling regeneration, followed by deer density, canopy openness and cover of competing vegetation.

Previous studies have found effects of one to several of these gap- and stand-level variables, but few have undertaken a comprehensive assessment of these variables across a large geographic area. Even though these factors were unable to explain much of the variability observed in seedling and sapling abundances, the results suggest that stand-level factors have a larger impact on regeneration than gap-level factors. Temporal and spatial variability in patterns of seed dispersal and seedling establishment (Clark et al 1998), heterogeneity in the suitability and availability of seed bed microhabitats (Houle 1992; Marx and Walters 2008), individual-level variation in sapling growth rates (Dietze and Clark *in prep*) and the chance presence of advanced regeneration saplings in the location of harvest gaps (Brokaw and Busing 2000) all contribute to unpredictability in the abundance and composition of gap-level regeneration.

Studies that focus on multiple factors will provide greater insight into the complexities of the regeneration process, with potential implications for our understanding of the process of succession, the mechanisms that account for species distributions across landscapes, and the maintenance of biodiversity in forest

communities. An integrated, multivariate approach that matches harvest practices to Habitat Types and local deer densities, and considers interactions between light levels and competing vegetation, is also necessary for management practices when the goal is to encourage the success of commercially valuable species, maintain biodiversity, and improve wildlife habitat.

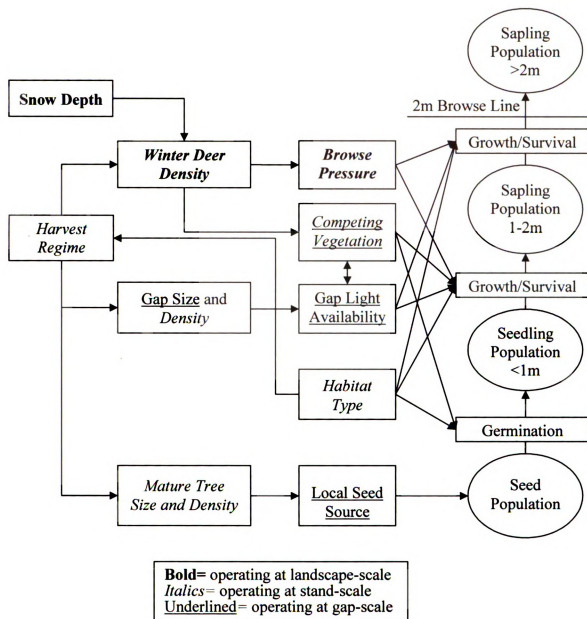


Figure 1.1. Hypothesized factors affecting northern hardwood regeneration throughout seedling and sapling ontogeny and the relationships between them. This is not an all inclusive diagram, but highlights many of the factors the literature and field observations emphasize as important.

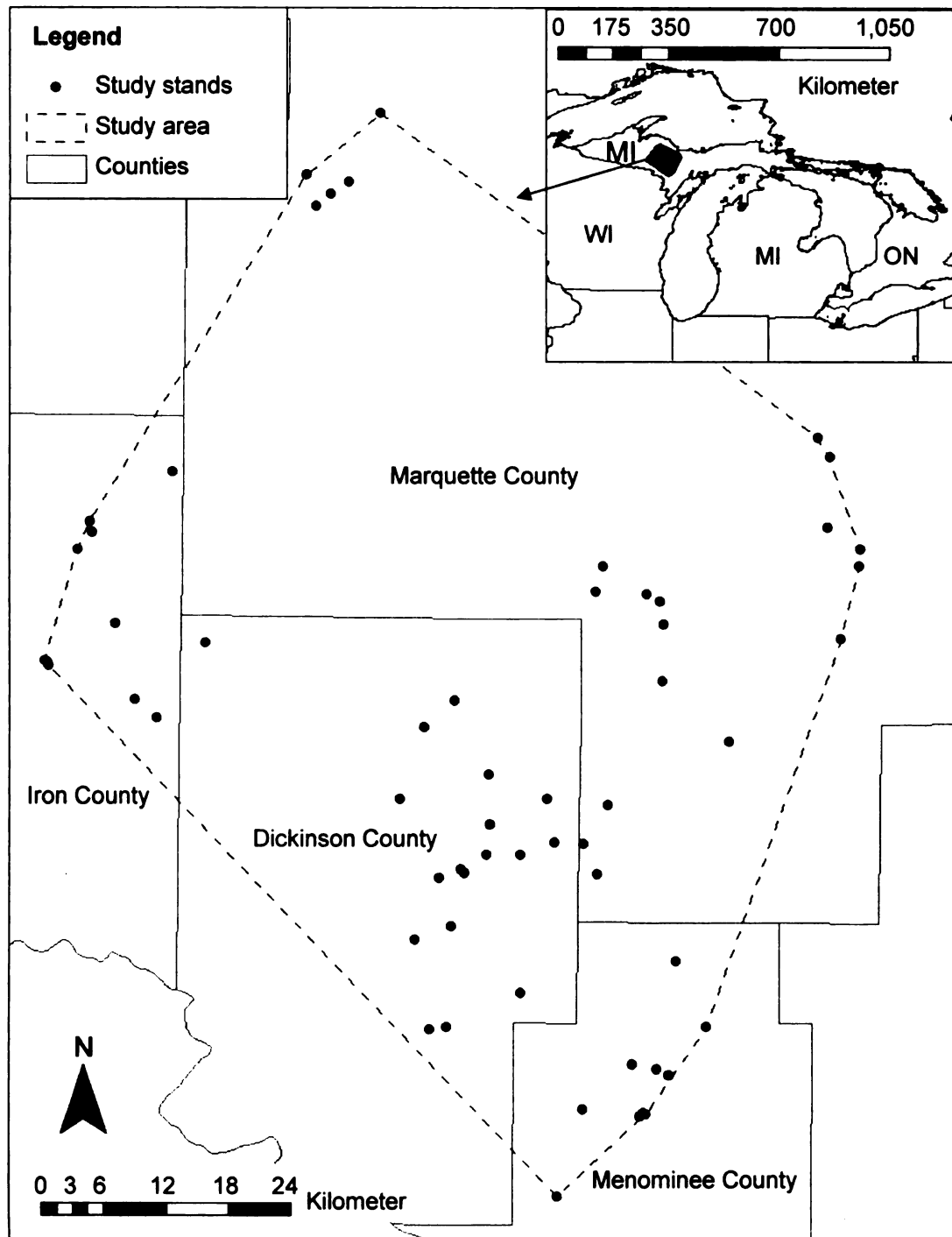


Figure 1.2. Map of study area. MI=Michigan, WI= Wisconsin, ON= Ontario, Canada.

Table 1.1. Northern hardwood Habitat Type descriptions (Burger and Kotar 2003).

| Habitat Type                                                                                                         | Primary landforms                                                                                     | Primary soils                                                                      | Soil moisture regime | Soil nutrient regime |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------|----------------------|
| AOCa<br>( <i>Acer saccharum</i> / <i>Osmorhiza claytoni</i> – <i>Caulophyllum thalictroides</i> )                    | Moraines, especially ground moraines, and loess deposits                                              | Well to moderately drained silt loam and loam texture soils                        | Mesic                | Rich to very rich    |
| ATD-Hp<br>( <i>Acer saccharum</i> - <i>Tsuga canadensis</i> / <i>Dryopteris spinulosa</i> - <i>Hepatica</i> variant) | Medium texture till plains                                                                            | Well drained and well developed sandy loam soils                                   | Mesic                | Medium to rich       |
| ATD<br>( <i>Acer saccharum</i> - <i>Tsuga canadensis</i> / <i>Dryopteris spinulosa</i> )                             | Coarse texture moraines, especially ground moraines, and loess deposits                               | Moderately well drained podzolized or well developed sandy and loam textured soils | Mesic                | Medium to rich       |
| ATM<br>( <i>Acer saccharum</i> - <i>Tsuga canadensis</i> / <i>Maianthemum canadense</i> )                            | End moraines and outwash covered ground moraines                                                      | Well to moderately well drained sandy loams and loamy sands                        | Dry-mesic to mesic   | Medium               |
| TMC<br>( <i>Tsuga canadensis</i> / <i>Maianthemum canadense</i> - <i>Coptis groenlandica</i> )                       | Moraines, scattered low-lying areas, along slope bottoms and drainages, and on lake and swamp borders | Poorly drained podzolized sandy loams, loamy sands and loams                       | Mesic to wet-mesic   | Medium               |

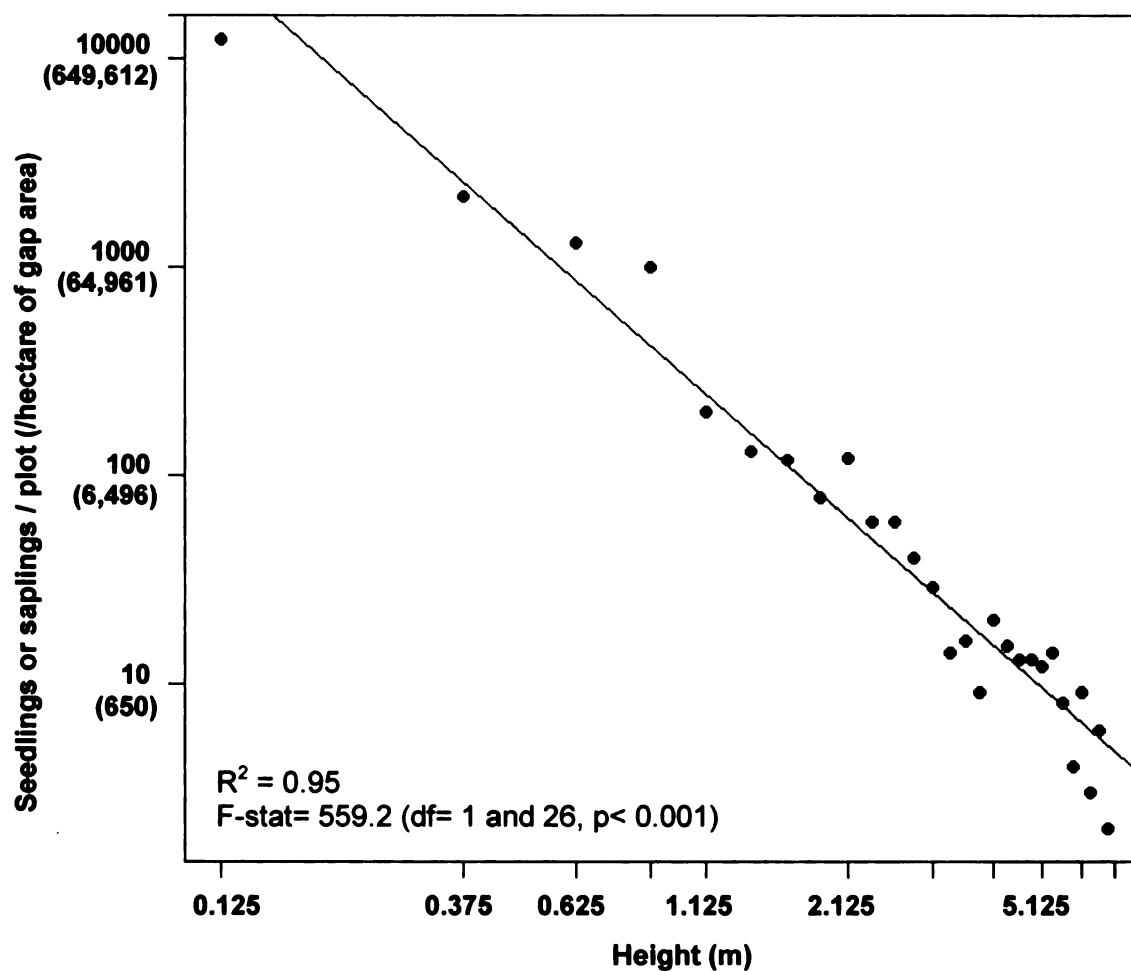


Figure 1.3. Relationship between maximum observed seedling and sapling density in a 154 m<sup>2</sup> gap plot among 347 study gaps versus height. This relationship was used to develop stocking estimates.  $\text{Log}_e(\text{Density}) = -2.316 \times \text{Log}_e(\text{Height}) + 5.738$ .

Table 1.2. Model specification for spatial trend, full and null generalized linear multilevel models (GLMM), linear multilevel models (LMM) and linear models (LM).  $\mu_{ij}$  is the predicted value for gap  $i$  at stand  $j$ .  $H'$ =Shannon diversity index.

| Variable                                            | Method | Distribution                                           | Gap-level model<br>(i)                  | Stand-level model<br>(i)                                  | Gap-level predictors<br>(Xi)                    | Stand-level predictors<br>(Zj) |
|-----------------------------------------------------|--------|--------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <b>Spatial Trend Model</b>                          |        |                                                        |                                         |                                                           |                                                 |                                |
| Seedlings<br>Saplings 1-2 m                         | GLMM   | $\sim \text{NegBin}(p, r)$<br>$p = r / (r + \mu_{ij})$ | $\log(\mu_{ij}) = \alpha_j$             | $\alpha_j \sim N(\gamma_0 + \gamma Z_j, \sigma^2 \alpha)$ |                                                 | N, E                           |
| Log(Sapling stocking)<br>Sqrt(H' seedlings)         | LMM    | $\sim N(\mu_{ij}, \sigma^2 y)$                         | $\mu_{ij} = \alpha_j$                   | $\alpha_j \sim N(\gamma_0 + \gamma Z_j, \sigma^2 \alpha)$ |                                                 | N, E                           |
| Sqrt(H' saplings 1-2 and 1-7 m)<br>Log(Growth rate) | LM     | $\sim N(\mu_i, \sigma^2 y)$                            | $\mu_i = \beta_0 + X_i \beta$           |                                                           |                                                 | N, E                           |
| <b>Full Model</b>                                   |        |                                                        |                                         |                                                           |                                                 |                                |
| Seedlings<br>Saplings 1-2 m                         | GLMM   | $\sim \text{NegBin}(p, r)$<br>$p = r / (r + \mu_{ij})$ | $\log(\mu_{ij}) = \alpha_j + X_i \beta$ | $\alpha_j \sim N(\gamma_0 + \gamma Z_j, \sigma^2 \alpha)$ | CO, CV, SP2008<br>CO, CV, SPHarvest             | HT, DD, TSH<br>HT, DD, TSH     |
| Log(Sapling stocking)<br>Sqrt(H' seedlings)         | LMM    | $\sim N(\mu_{ij}, \sigma^2 y)$                         | $\mu_{ij} = \alpha_j + X_i \beta$       | $\alpha_j \sim N(\gamma_0 + \gamma Z_j, \sigma^2 \alpha)$ | CO, CV, SPHarvest<br>CO, CV, H'M                | HT, DD, TSH<br>HT, DD, TSH     |
| Sqrt(H' saplings 1-2 and 1-7 m)<br>Log(Growth rate) | LM     | $\sim N(\mu_i, \sigma^2 y)$                            | $\mu_i = \beta_0 + X_i \beta$           |                                                           | CO, CV, H'MS<br>SapHt, AdR, CO, CV, HT, DD, TSH | HT, DD, TSH                    |
| <b>Null Model</b>                                   |        |                                                        |                                         |                                                           |                                                 |                                |
| Seedlings<br>Saplings 1-2 m                         | GLMM   | $\sim \text{NegBin}(p, r)$<br>$p = r / (r + \mu_{ij})$ | $\log(\mu_{ij}) = \alpha_j$             | $\alpha_j \sim N(\gamma_0, \sigma^2 \alpha)$              |                                                 |                                |
| Log(Sapling stocking)<br>Sqrt(H' seedlings)         | LMM    | $\sim N(\mu_{ij}, \sigma^2 y)$                         | $\mu_{ij} = \alpha_j$                   | $\alpha_j \sim N(\gamma_0, \sigma^2 \alpha)$              |                                                 |                                |
| Sqrt(H' saplings 1-2 and 1-7 m)<br>Log(Growth rate) | LM     | $\sim N(\mu_i, \sigma^2 y)$                            | $\mu_i = \beta_0$                       |                                                           |                                                 |                                |

N=UTM Northing, E=UTM Easting, CO= canopy openness, CV= competing vegetation, SP2008= seed production potential in 2008, SPHarvest= seed production potential at the time of harvest, H'M= H' mature trees and stumps, HT= Habitat Type, DD= deer density, TSH= time since harvest, SapHt= sapling height, AdR= dummy variable indicating if sapling is advanced regeneration

Table 1.3. Abundance of saplings 1-7 m tall per 154 m<sup>2</sup> gap plot (per hectare of gap area): Average (Ave), median (Med), standard deviation (Stdev), minimum (Min) and maximum (Max) and percent of gap plots where present (% gaps) (n=347 gaps).

|                                                       | Ave / plot<br>(/hectare) | Med           | Stdev            | Min | Max             | % gaps |
|-------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------|---------------|------------------|-----|-----------------|--------|
| Sugar maple<br><i>Acer saccharum</i> Marsh.           | 39.3<br>(2,553)          | 1<br>(65)     | 89.0<br>(5,782)  | 0   | 494<br>(32,091) | 52     |
| Ironwood<br><i>Ostrya virginiana</i> (Mill.) K. Koch  | 10.5<br>(6,82)           | 1<br>(65)     | 25.7<br>(1,670)  | 0   | 188<br>(12,213) | 57     |
| White ash<br><i>Fraxinus americana</i> L.             | 7.3<br>(474)             | 0             | 36.5<br>(2,371)  | 0   | 373<br>(24,231) | 19     |
| Red maple<br><i>Acer rubrum</i> L.                    | 5.0<br>(325)             | 0             | 24.1<br>(1,566)  | 0   | 299<br>(19,423) | 14     |
| Black cherry<br><i>Prunus serotina</i> Ehrh.          | 2.6<br>(169)             | 0             | 8.5<br>(552)     | 0   | 94<br>(6,106)   | 32     |
| Quaking aspen<br><i>Populus tremuloides</i> Michx.    | 0.7<br>(45)              | 0             | 7.6<br>(494)     | 0   | 132<br>(8,575)  | 4      |
| Balsam fir<br><i>Abies balsamea</i> (L.) Mill.        | 0.6<br>(39)              | 0             | 3.6<br>(234)     | 0   | 42<br>(2,728)   | 10     |
| White spruce<br><i>Picea glauca</i> (Moench) Voss     | 0.1<br>(6)               | 0             | 0.4<br>(26)      | 0   | 4<br>(260)      | 5      |
| Balsam poplar<br><i>Populus balsamifera</i> L.        | 0.1<br>(6)               | 0             | 0.8<br>(52)      | 0   | 11<br>(715)     | 2      |
| American elm<br><i>Ulmus americana</i> L.             | 0.1<br>(6)               | 0             | 0.5<br>(32)      | 0   | 6<br>(390)      | 4      |
| Yellow birch<br><i>Betula alleghaniensis</i> Britton  | 0.1<br>(6)               | 0             | 0.4<br>(26)      | 0   | 5<br>(325)      | 3      |
| Bigtooth aspen<br><i>Populus grandidentata</i> Michx. | 0.1<br>(6)               | 0             | 1.1<br>(71)      | 0   | 20<br>(1,299)   | 1      |
| Northern red oak<br><i>Quercus rubra</i> L.           | 0.1<br>(6)               | 0             | 0.5<br>(32)      | 0   | 6<br>(390)      | 3      |
| American basswood<br><i>Tilia americana</i> L.        | <0.1<br>(<6)             | 0             | 0.3<br>(19)      | 0   | 3<br>(195)      | 3      |
| American beech<br><i>Fagus grandifolia</i> Ehrh.      | <0.1<br>(<6)             | 0             | 0.2<br>(13)      | 0   | 2<br>(130)      | 1      |
| Black ash<br><i>Fraxinus nigra</i> Marsh.             | <0.1<br>(<6)             | 0             | 0.1<br>(6)       | 0   | 1<br>(65)       | 1      |
| Paper birch<br><i>Betula papyrifera</i> Marshall      | <0.1<br>(<6)             | 0             | 0.1<br>(6)       | 0   | 1<br>(65)       | 1      |
| Tamarack<br><i>Larix laricina</i> (Du Roi) K. Koch    | <0.1<br>(<6)             | 0             | 0.1<br>(6)       | 0   | 1<br>(65)       | 1      |
| All species                                           | 66.5<br>(4,320)          | 16<br>(1,039) | 108.8<br>(7,068) | 0   | 575<br>(37,353) | 88     |

Table 1.4. Sapling type by species and height. Gap colonizers germinated after gap formation and advanced regeneration saplings were present before harvest.

|                    | Gap colonizers (%) | Advanced regeneration (%) | Number of samples |
|--------------------|--------------------|---------------------------|-------------------|
| <b>Sugar maple</b> |                    |                           |                   |
| 1 - <2 m tall      | 53                 | 47                        | 118               |
| 2 - <4 m tall      | 9                  | 91                        | 93                |
| 4 - <7 m tall      | 0                  | 100                       | 81                |
| <b>Ironwood</b>    |                    |                           |                   |
| 1 - <2 m tall      | 34                 | 66                        | 89                |
| 2 - <4 m tall      | 12                 | 88                        | 74                |
| 4 - <7 m tall      | 0                  | 100                       | 50                |

Table 1.5. Summary of gap and stand-level independent variables: Average (Ave), median (Med), standard deviation (Stdev), minimum (Min), maximum (Max) and number of gap or stand-level observations (N obs).

|                                        | Ave  | Med  | Stdev | Min  | Max  | N obs |
|----------------------------------------|------|------|-------|------|------|-------|
| <b>Gap-level</b>                       |      |      |       |      |      |       |
| Competing veg (%)                      | 42   | 41   | 23    | 0    | 97   | 347   |
| Gap size (m <sup>2</sup> )             | 191  | 156  | 103   | 82   | 913  | 347   |
| Canopy openness (%)                    | 13.4 | 11.8 | 7.3   | 1.7  | 54.8 | 337   |
| SP <sub>2008</sub> sugar maple         | 6.8  | 6.5  | 2.7   | 0.9  | 15.9 | 347   |
| SP <sub>Harvest</sub> sugar maple      | 15.9 | 11.4 | 13.6  | 1.7  | 83.6 | 341   |
| SP <sub>2008</sub> ironwood            | 0.4  | 0.00 | 1.5   | 0.00 | 16.6 | 347   |
| SP <sub>Harvest</sub> ironwood         | 1.1  | 0.00 | 5.4   | 0.00 | 67.8 | 341   |
| SP <sub>2008</sub> other spp           | 1.8  | 0.6  | 2.8   | 0.00 | 22.7 | 347   |
| SP <sub>Harvest</sub> other spp        | 4.6  | 1.3  | 8.7   | 0.00 | 66.5 | 341   |
| <b>Stand-level</b>                     |      |      |       |      |      |       |
| Deer density (deer / km <sup>2</sup> ) | 13.9 | 12.4 | 11.7  | 0.6  | 61.6 | 59    |
| SMBI                                   | 2.2  | 2.3  | 0.9   | 0.4  | 3.6  | 25    |
| Snow depth (cm)                        | 26.6 | 23.3 | 7.4   | 15.6 | 48   | 59    |
| TSHarvest (years)                      | 9    | 9    | 3     | 2    | 15   | 59    |

Competing veg= % cover of competing vegetation (*Rubus* spp, grass/*Carex* spp, other shrubs and ferns), gap size= extended gap size, SP = seedling production potential ( $\Sigma$ diameter/distance<sup>2</sup>) for 2008 and at time of harvest, deer density= estimated deer / km<sup>2</sup> winter 2007-2008, SMBI= stand average sugar maple browse index, snow depth= average snow depth from November 2007-April 2008, TSHarvest= time since harvest.

Table 1.6. Kendall tau rank correlations between gap and stand-level variables. Comparisons between gap-level and stand-level variables use stand-averages for gap-level variables to comply with independence assumptions.

|              | CV      | Gap size | CO      | Deer density | SMBI   | TSHarvest |
|--------------|---------|----------|---------|--------------|--------|-----------|
| Snow depth   | 0.13    | 0.06     | 0.17*   | -0.21**      | -0.01  | -0.03     |
| TSHarvest    | -0.23** | -0.05    | -0.30** | 0.16*        | 0.34** |           |
| SBMI         | 0.06    | 0.17     | 0.01    | 0.22         |        |           |
| Deer density | 0.06    | 0.08     | -0.04   |              |        |           |
| CO           | 0.28**  | 0.30**   |         |              |        |           |
| Gap size     | 0.18**  |          |         |              |        |           |

\*\*p-value < 0.05, \*p-value < 0.10

CV= % cover of competing vegetation (*Rubus* spp, grass/*Carex* spp, other shrubs and ferns), gap size= extended gap size (m<sup>2</sup>), CO = % canopy openness, deer density= estimated deer / km<sup>2</sup> winter 2007-2008, SMBI= stand average sugar maple browse index, snow depth= average snow depth from November 2007-April 2008, TSHarvest= time since harvest.

Table 1.7. Differences in stand-level and stand average gap-level variables by Habitat Type based on Kruskal-Wallis rank sum test. Inter-quartile ranges are listed for those variables that significantly differ between Habitat Types. Significant comparisons ( $p < 0.05$ ) are based on Wilcoxon signed-rank test with Bonferroni adjusted p-values.

| Variable                                                 | $\chi^2$ | df | p-value            | AOCa      | ATD-Hp    | ATD       | ATM       | TMC                   | Significant Comparisons |
|----------------------------------------------------------|----------|----|--------------------|-----------|-----------|-----------|-----------|-----------------------|-------------------------|
| N. stand obs (N. obs for SMBI)                           |          |    |                    | 19 (4)    | 15 (0)    | 12 (10)   | 11 (10)   | 2 (1)                 |                         |
| <b>Stand-level and stand average gap-level variables</b> |          |    |                    |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| Snow depth (cm)                                          | 22.09    | 4  | <0.001             | 20.6-29.4 | 18.1-22.7 | 25.4-34.2 | 23.6-38.4 | 31.3-31.5             | ATD, ATM>ATD-Hp         |
| TSHarvest                                                | 3.75     | 4  | 0.441              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| SMBI                                                     | 7.54     | 3  | 0.057              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| Estimated deer density                                   | 7.17     | 4  | 0.127              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| Canopy openness                                          | 3.61     | 4  | 0.462              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| Competing vegetation                                     | 2.52     | 4  | 0.642              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| Grass/ <i>Carex</i> spp (%)                              | 10.99    | 4  | 0.027              | 5.0-21.5  | 10.5-30.0 | 2.0-13.5  | 4.5-14.0  | 2.8-3.5 <sup>2</sup>  |                         |
| <i>Rubus</i> spp                                         | 9.21     | 4  | 0.056 <sup>1</sup> |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| Other shrubs                                             | 8.85     | 4  | 0.065              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| Ferns (%)                                                | 12.38    | 4  | 0.015              | 5.5-20.0  | 1.0-7.5   | 5.0-14.3  | 6.0-13.0  | 17.3-21.5             | AOCa > ATD-Hp           |
| SP2008 sugar maple                                       | 7.90     | 4  | 0.095              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| SPHarvest sugar maple                                    | 9.38     | 4  | 0.052 <sup>1</sup> |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| SP2008 ironwood                                          | 5.12     | 4  | 0.275              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| SPHarvest ironwood                                       | 5.92     | 4  | 0.205              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| SP2008 other spp                                         | 5.03     | 4  | 0.284              |           |           |           |           |                       |                         |
| SPHarvest other spp                                      | 10.25    | 4  | 0.036              | 0.4-4.1   | 1.3-11.1  | 0.6-4.8   | 4.1-8.3   | 8.7-12.9 <sup>2</sup> |                         |

SMBI= stand average sugar maple browse index, SP = seedling production potential ( $\Sigma$ diameter/distance<sup>2</sup>) for 2008 and at time of harvest, TSHarvest=time since harvest

<sup>1</sup> $\chi^2$  was significant when TMC was removed from analysis because of low sample size (see text for details)

<sup>2</sup>Pairwise comparisons were not significant, even when TMC was removed from analysis

Table 1.8.

Spatial patterns in sapling abundance 1-2 m tall, stocking levels and Shannon Diversity Index (H'): mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in that variable with Northing or Easting (UTM position rescaled from 0 to 1). Parameter estimates are on the log or square root scale due to the use of a log-link or transformations (where indicated). Null models include the overall intercept and random standard level intercepts for multilevel models and the overall intercept for growth rate linear models. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for the spatial model over the null model.

| Variable                                                  | Northing |               | Easting |               | N. gaps / stands |  | DIC (spatial model) | DIC (null model) |
|-----------------------------------------------------------|----------|---------------|---------|---------------|------------------|--|---------------------|------------------|
|                                                           | Mean     | CI            | Mean    | CI            |                  |  |                     |                  |
| Seedling Abundance 1-2 m / 2 m <sup>2</sup> gap plot      |          |               |         |               |                  |  |                     |                  |
| Sugar maple                                               | 3.44**   | 2.13 – 4.77   | 1.16**  | 0.04 – 2.28   | 337 / 59         |  | 2182.68             | 2184.88          |
| Ironwood                                                  | -3.67**  | -6.08 – -1.49 | -0.99   | -3.06 – 0.94  | 337 / 59         |  | 709.60              | 714.41           |
| Other spp                                                 | 0.67     | -1.42 – 2.79  | 1.69*   | -0.15 – 3.58  | 337 / 59         |  | 1131.67             | 1132.46          |
| Sapling Abundance 1-2 m / 154 m <sup>2</sup> gap plot     |          |               |         |               |                  |  |                     |                  |
| Sugar maple                                               | 16.51**  | 12.21 – 21.76 | 4.51**  | 1.37 – 7.79   | 331 / 58         |  | 1216.47             | 1218.17          |
| Ironwood                                                  | -1.25    | -4.75 – 2.34  | -1.03   | -4.04 – 2.05  | 331 / 58         |  | 1297.49             | 1296.83          |
| Other spp                                                 | 3.98**   | 1.02 – 7.12   | 1.89    | -0.75 – 4.56  | 331 / 58         |  | 1487.95             | 1489.85          |
| Log(Stocking Saplings 1-7m / 154 m <sup>2</sup> gap plot) |          |               |         |               |                  |  |                     |                  |
| Sugar maple                                               | 3.13**   | 1.69 – 4.57   | 2.64**  | 1.48 – 3.80   | 164 / 45         |  | 538.79              | 544.32           |
| Ironwood                                                  | -0.97    | -2.83 – 0.86  | -0.46   | -1.95 – 1.03  | 184 / 49         |  | 625.80              | 625.81           |
| Other spp                                                 | 1.45*    | -0.17 – 3.06  | 2.23**  | 0.81 – 3.62   | 193 / 48         |  | 675.30              | 675.80           |
| Sqrt(H')                                                  |          |               |         |               |                  |  |                     |                  |
| Seedlings                                                 | -0.27**  | -0.43 – -0.10 | -0.08   | -0.23 – 0.07  | 182 / 54         |  | -102.84             | -100.26          |
| Saplings 1-2 m                                            | 0.03     | -0.20 – 0.27  | -0.23** | -0.41 – -0.04 | 180 / 42         |  | -50.73              | -50.06           |
| Saplings 1-7m                                             | 0.00     | -0.21 – 0.21  | -0.16*  | -0.32 – 0.01  | 201 / 46         |  | -57.31              | -57.47           |
| Log(Sapling growth rate after harvest m / yr)             |          |               |         |               |                  |  |                     |                  |
| Sugar maple                                               | 0.54**   | 0.19 – 0.89   | -0.10   | -0.30 – 0.10  | 127 / 26         |  | 105.89              | 114.86           |
| Ironwood                                                  | 0.20     | -0.13 – 0.54  | 0.16    | -0.14 – 0.45  | 98 / 30          |  | 85.61               | 84.03            |

\*\*indicates 95% credible interval does not overlap 0, \*indicates 90% CI does not overlap 0

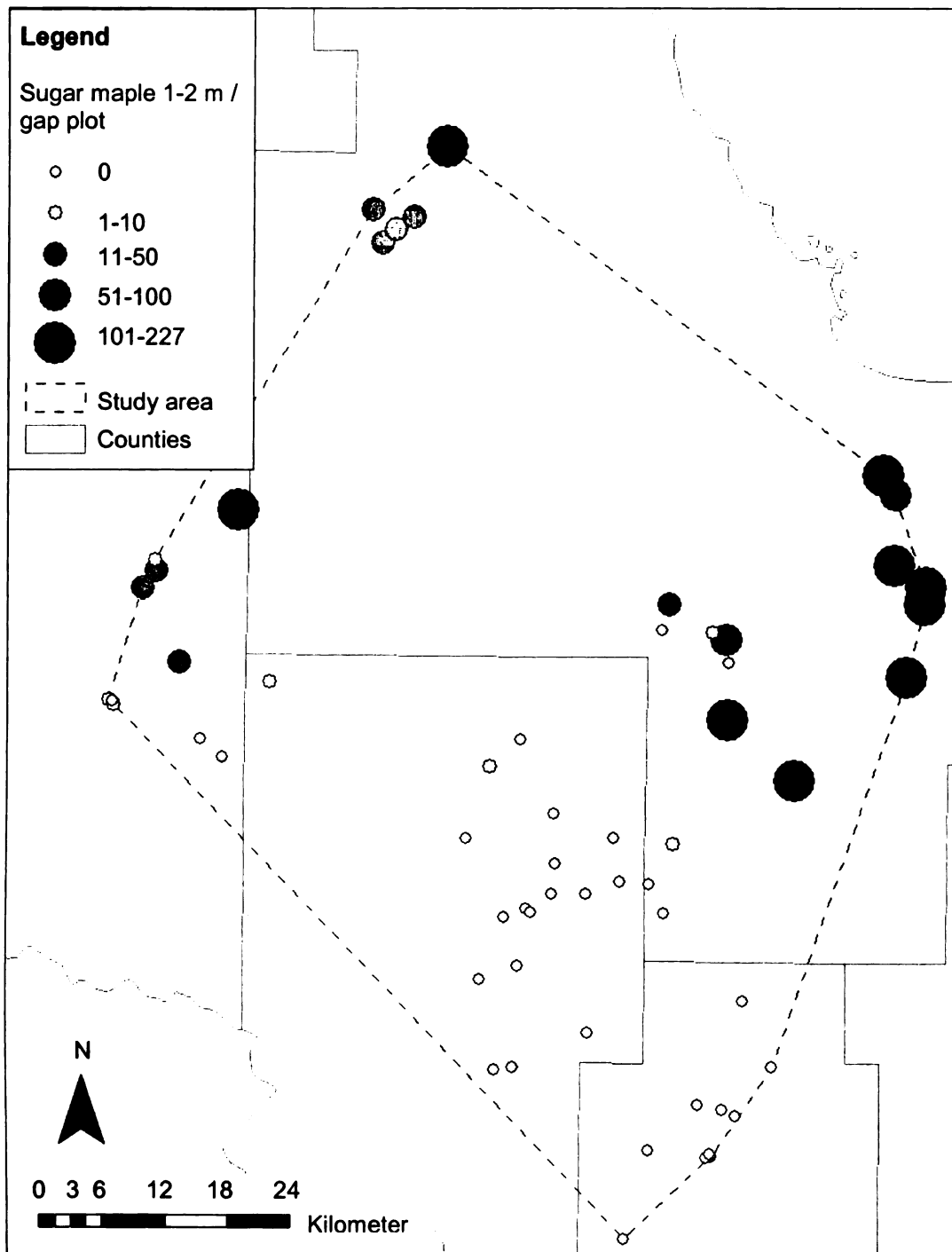


Figure 1.4. Site average sugar maple sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance per gap plot across the study area. For reference, 10 saplings / gap plot is 650 saplings / hectare and 227 saplings / gap plot is 14,746 saplings / hectare of gap area.

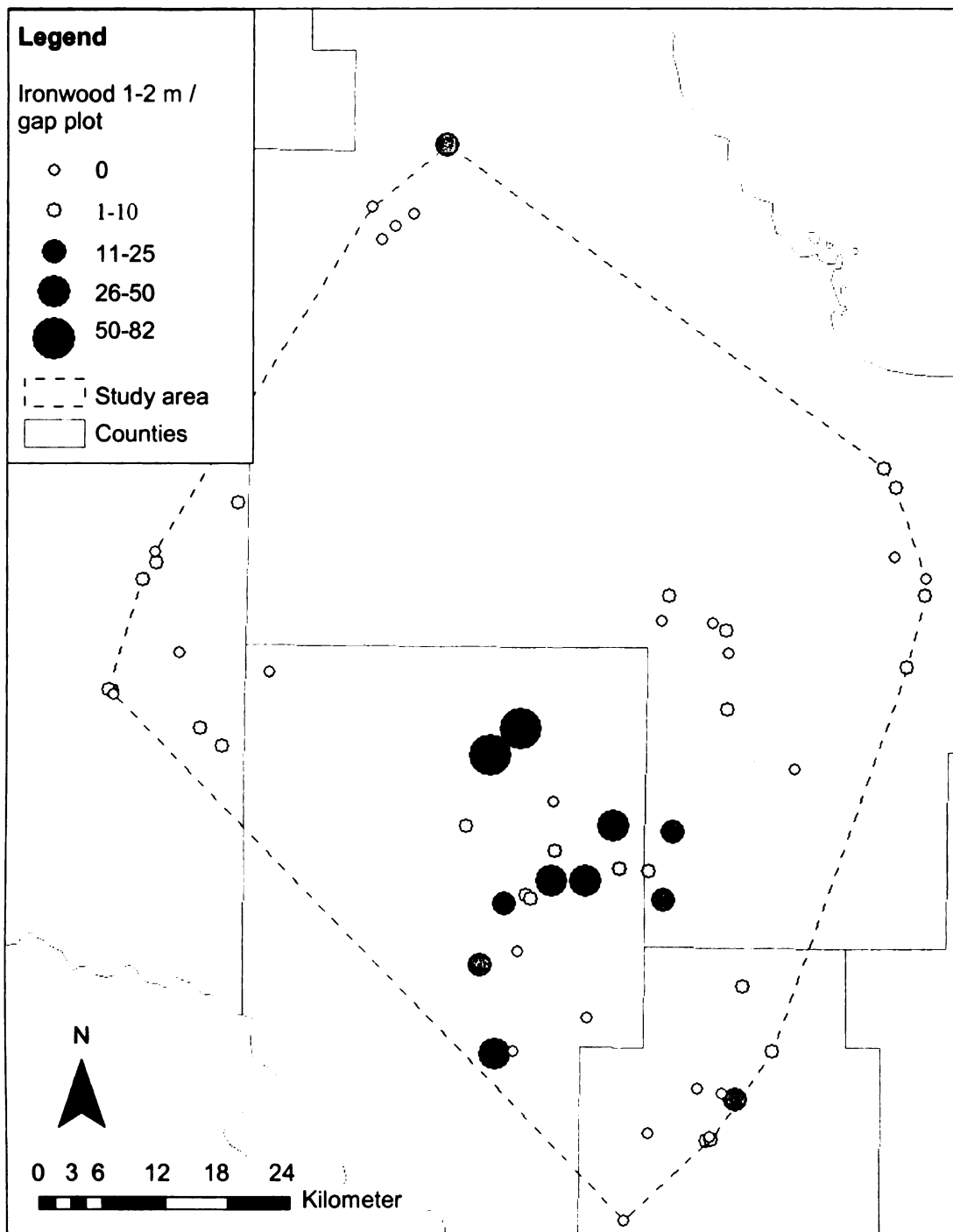


Figure 1.5. Site average ironwood sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance per gap plot across the study area. For reference, 10 saplings / gap plot is 650 saplings / hectare and 82 saplings / gap plot is 5,327 saplings / hectare of gap area.

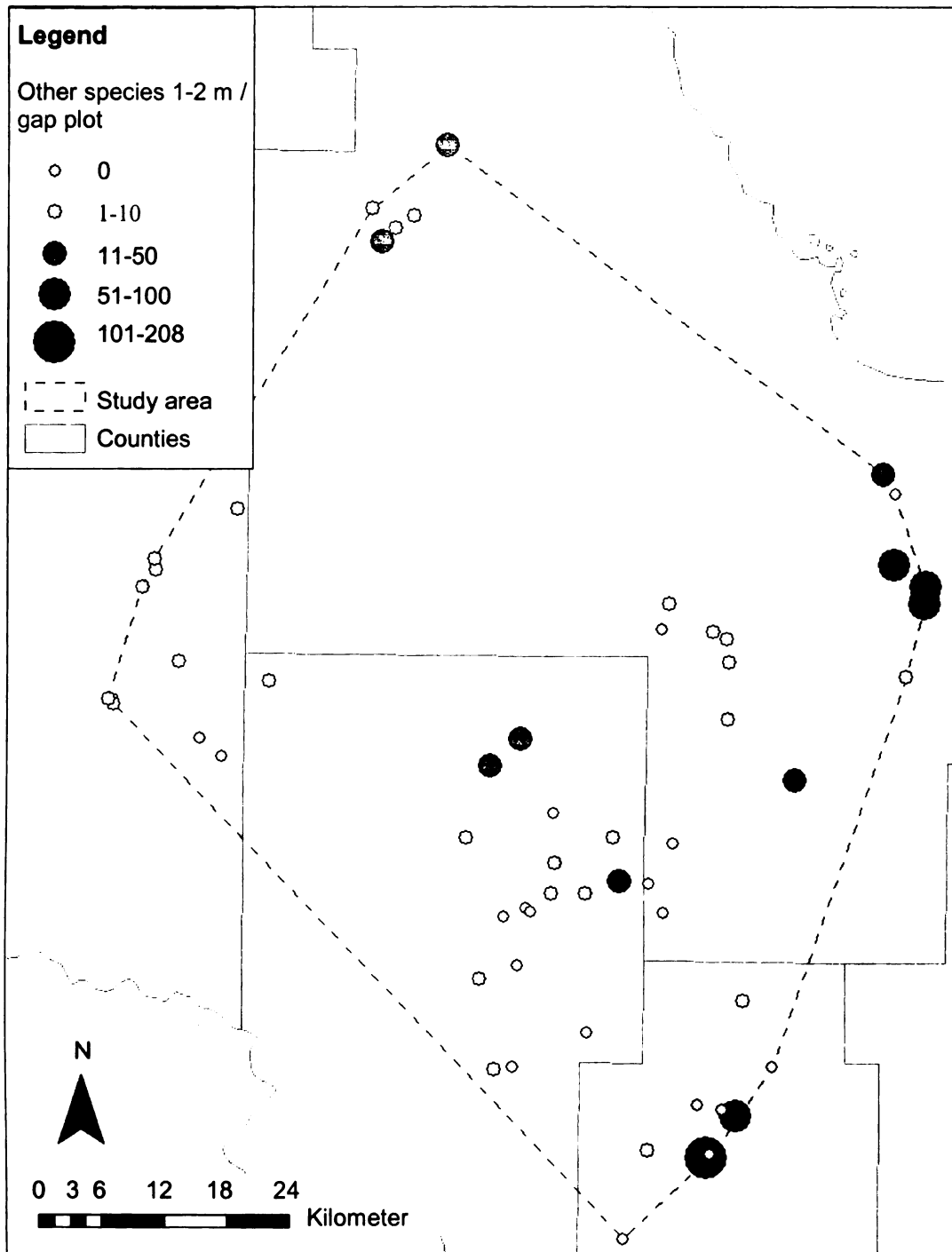


Figure 1.6. Site average other species sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance per gap plot across the study area. For reference, 10 saplings / gap plot is 650 saplings / hectare and 208 saplings / gap plot is 13,512 saplings / hectare of gap area.

Table 1.9. Spatial patterns in gap- and stand-level variables: bootstrap parameter estimate and 95% confidence intervals for stand-level variables or stand averages of gap-level variables. Positive values indicate increases in that variable with Northing or Easting (UTM position rescaled from 0 to 1). Gap- and stand-level variables were not standardized for this analysis.

| Variable                          | Northing |                | Easting  |                | N.<br>stands |
|-----------------------------------|----------|----------------|----------|----------------|--------------|
|                                   | Estimate | CI             | Estimate | CI             |              |
| Snow depth                        | 22.24**  | 16.29 – 28.83  | -4.75*   | -8.57 – 0.08   | 59           |
| Time since harvest                | -1.43    | -4.04 – 1.45   | -1.81    | -4.89 – 1.39   | 59           |
| SMBI                              | -4.03**  | -5.26 – -3.02  | -1.66**  | -2.20 – -1.10  | 25           |
| Estimated deer density            | -17.51** | -26.27 – -9.42 | -10.48** | -23.99 – -0.33 | 59           |
| Canopy openness                   | 4.26     | -1.03 – 9.16   | 1.60     | -3.14 – 7.26   | 59           |
| Competing veg                     | -5.29    | -23.79 – 13.94 | -21.28** | -37.23 – -4.51 | 59           |
| SP <sub>2008</sub> sugar maple    | -0.55    | -2.34 – 1.47   | 0.68     | -1.25 – 2.73   | 59           |
| SP <sub>Harvest</sub> sugar maple | 10.64**  | 3.76 – 17.56   | 1.43     | -4.93 – 8.18   | 58           |
| SP <sub>2008</sub> ironwood       | -0.94**  | -1.86 – -0.31  | -0.38**  | -0.95 – -0.04  | 59           |
| SP <sub>Harvest</sub> ironwood    | -1.65**  | -3.40 – -0.45  | -0.54    | -1.86 – 0.63   | 58           |
| SP <sub>2008</sub> other spp      | -0.55    | -2.64 – 1.32   | -1.21    | -3.49 – 0.60   | 59           |
| SP <sub>Harvest</sub> other spp   | -1.51    | -7.62 – 4.42   | -0.69    | -6.84 – 4.26   | 58           |

\*\* indicates 95% CI does not overlap 0, \* indicates 90% CI does not overlap 0  
SMBI= sugar maple browse index.

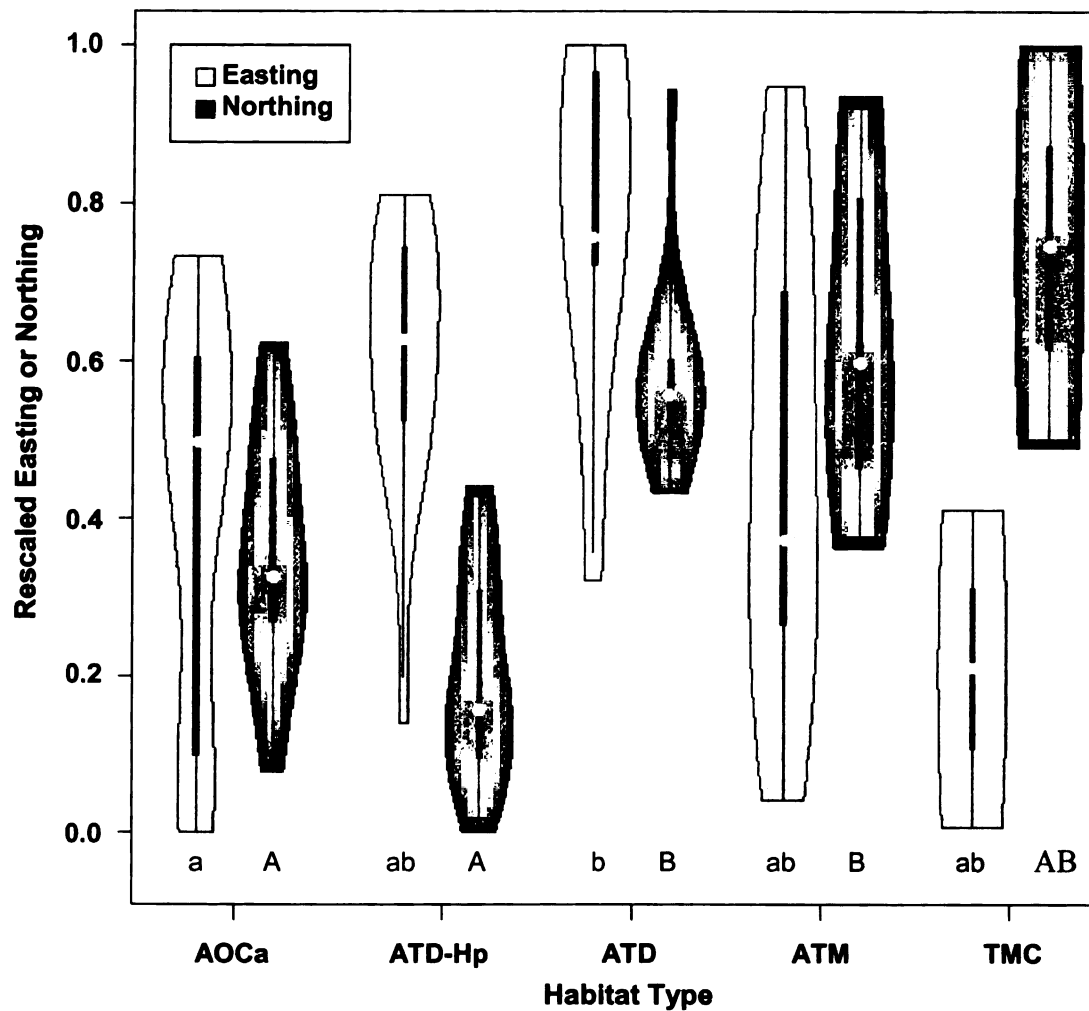


Figure 1.7. Spatial distributions of Habitat Types by UTM Easting and Northing (scaled to 0-1). Letters indicate significant differences between Habitat Types based on Wilcoxon signed-rank test with Bonferroni adjusted p-value. Violin plots show distribution of values and median (white dot), interquartile range (thick vertical line) and range of values  $1.5 \times \text{IQR}$  (thin vertical line).

Figure 1.8. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on seedling (<1 m tall) abundance: mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in seedling abundance with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate on the log scale. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. SM=sugar maple, IW=ironwood, Other=other species, SP<sub>2008</sub>=seedling production potential ( $\Sigma \text{diameter}/\text{distance}^2$ ) for 2008, Random Int. Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.1.

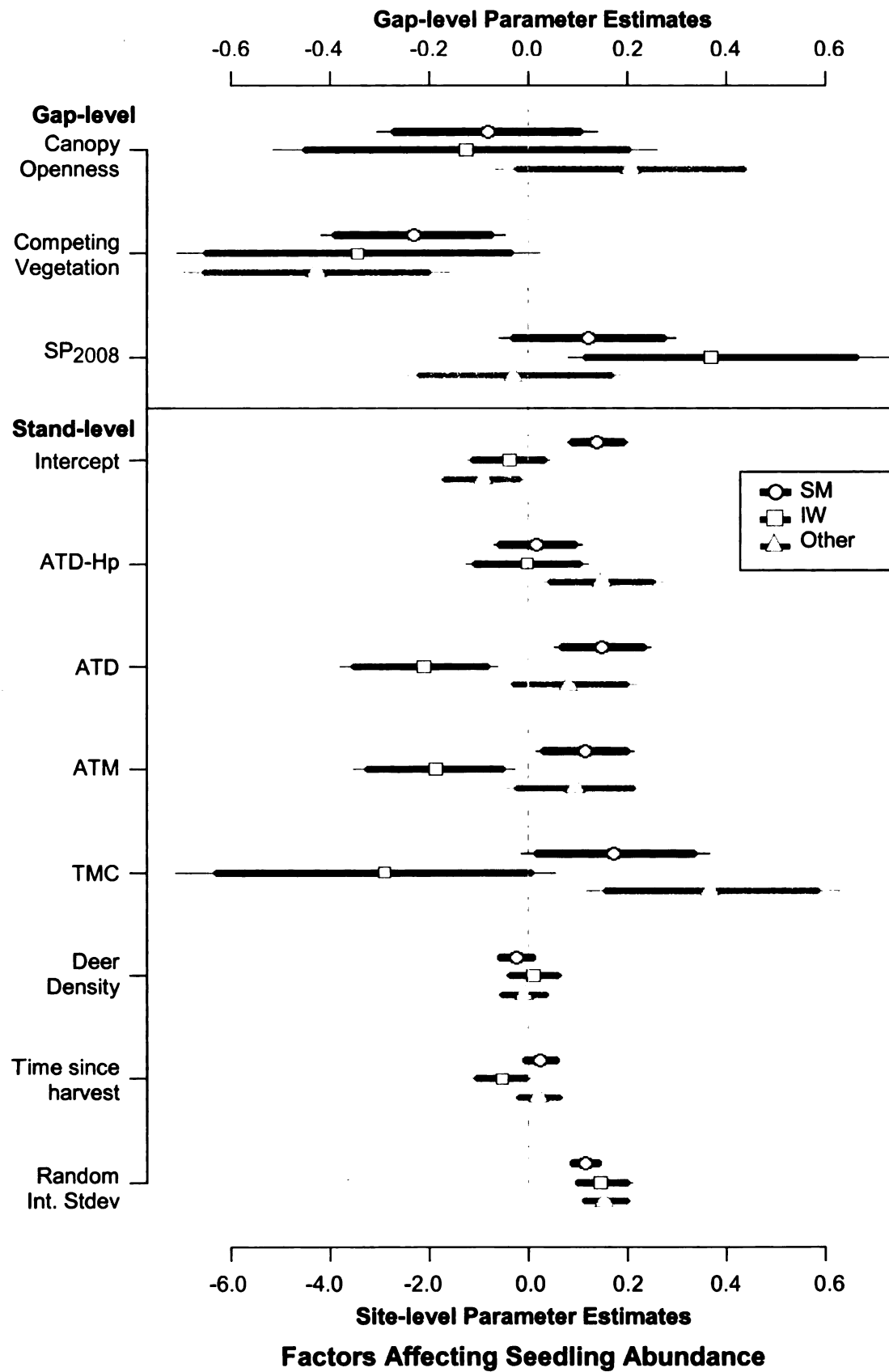


Figure 1.9. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on small sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance: mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in sapling abundance with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate on the log scale. AOCa and ATD-Hp are reference Habitat Types for sugar maple and AOCa is the reference Habitat Type for ironwood and other species. SM=sugar maple, IW=ironwood, Other=other species,  $SP_{Harvest}$ = seedling production potential ( $\Sigma \text{diameter}/\text{distance}^2$ ) at time of harvest, Random Int. Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.2.

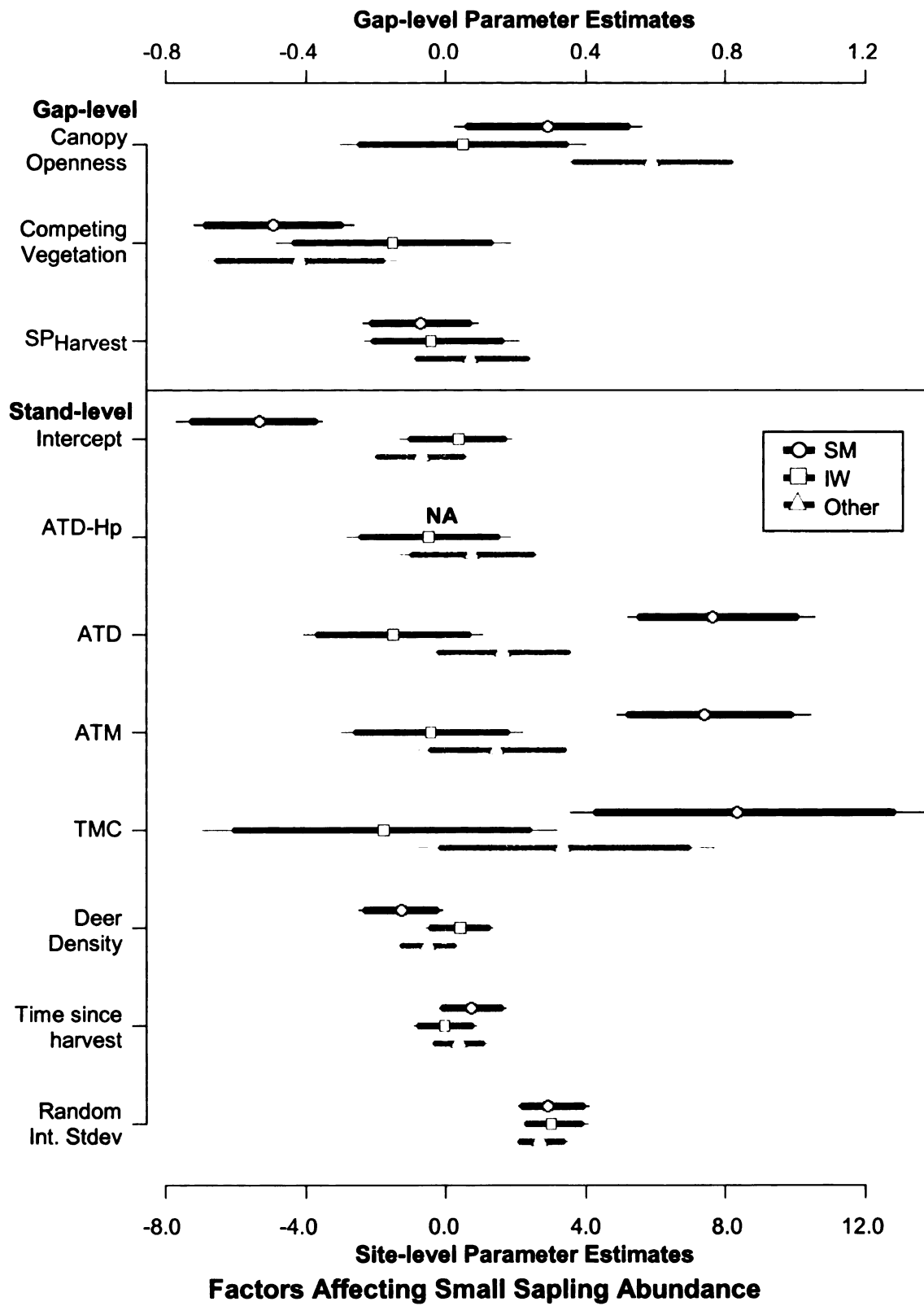


Figure 1.10. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on log transformed sapling (1-7 m tall) stocking-level: mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in sapling stocking on the log scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. SM=sugar maple, IW=ironwood, Other=other species,  $SP_{Harvest}$ = seedling production potential ( $\sum \text{diameter}/\text{distance}^2$ ) at time of harvest, Random Int. Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.3.

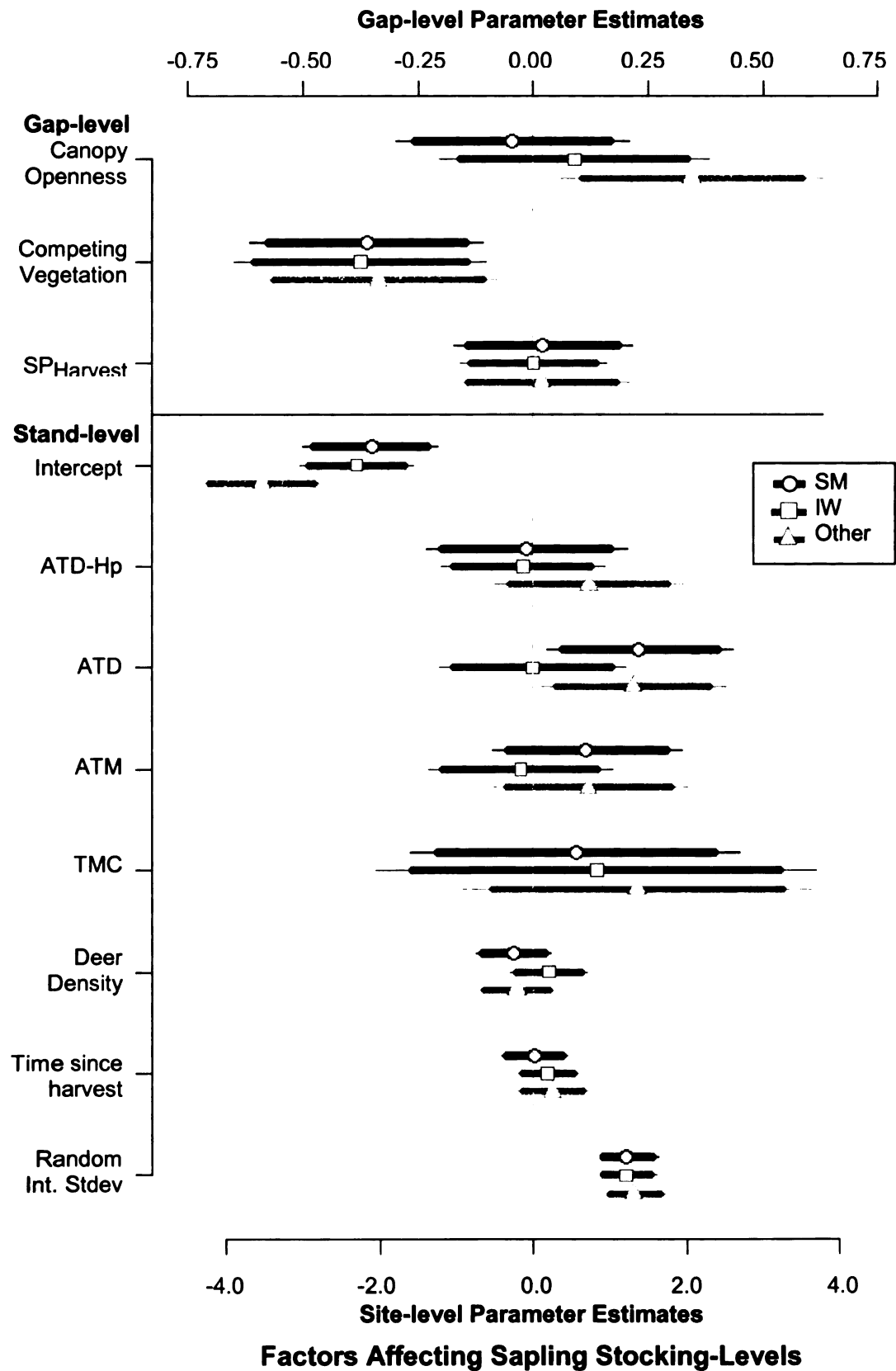


Table 1.10. Deviance Information Criterion for full models (all gap- and stand-level covariates) and null models (overall intercept and random stand-level intercepts for multilevel models and the overall intercept for growth rate linear models) and number of gaps and stands with observations. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.

| Variable                                  | Full model | Null model | N. gaps / stands |
|-------------------------------------------|------------|------------|------------------|
| <b>Seedling abundance (GLMM)</b>          |            |            |                  |
| Sugar maple                               | 2172.61    | 2184.88    | 337 / 59         |
| Ironwood                                  | 701.20     | 714.41     | 337 / 59         |
| Other species                             | 1132.04    | 1132.46    | 337 / 59         |
| <b>Small sapling abundance (GLMM)</b>     |            |            |                  |
| Sugar maple                               | 1197.10    | 1218.17    | 331 / 58         |
| Ironwood                                  | 1299.96    | 1296.83    | 331 / 58         |
| Other species                             | 1468.80    | 1489.85    | 331 / 58         |
| <b>Log(Sapling stocking-levels) (LMM)</b> |            |            |                  |
| Sugar maple                               | 540.62     | 544.32     | 164 / 45         |
| Ironwood                                  | 622.61     | 625.81     | 184 / 49         |
| Other species                             | 674.85     | 675.80     | 193 / 48         |
| <b>Sqrt(H') (LMM)</b>                     |            |            |                  |
| H' Seedlings                              | -112.27    | -100.26    | 182 / 54         |
| H' Small Saplings                         | -46.81     | -50.06     | 180 / 42         |
| H' All Saplings                           | -54.46     | -57.47     | 201 / 46         |
| <b>Log(Post-harvest growth rate) (LM)</b> |            |            |                  |
| Sugar maple                               | 2.34       | 114.86     | 127 / 26         |
| Ironwood                                  | 13.64      | 84.03      | 98 / 30          |

GLMM=generalized linear mixed model, LMM= linear mixed model, LM= linear model, H'=Shannon Diversity Index

**Figure 1.11.** Observed sapling (1-2 m tall) abundance and mean posterior predicted values and 95% credible intervals per gap plot from generalized linear mixed models with gap- and stand-level covariates (full model) and the null model with an overall intercept and stand-level random effect intercepts.

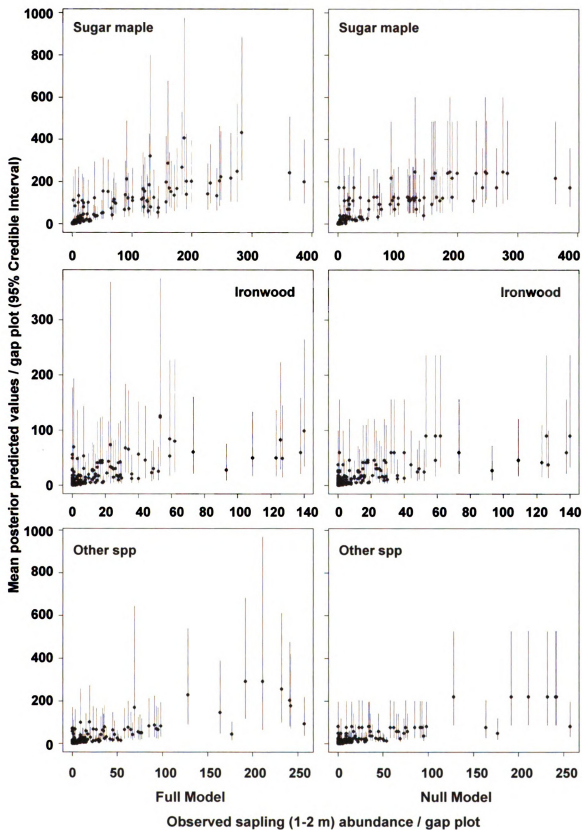


Figure 1.12. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on square root transformed Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ) for seedling (<1 m tall) ( $H'$ seedling), small saplings (1-2 m tall) ( $H'$ Sap1) and all saplings (1-7 m tall) ( $H'$ SapTot): mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in  $H'$  on the square root scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type.  $H'$ Overstory =  $H'$  of overstory trees for  $H'$ Seedling and  $H'$  of overstory trees and stumps for  $H'$ Sap1 and  $H'$ SapTot. Random Int. Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.4.

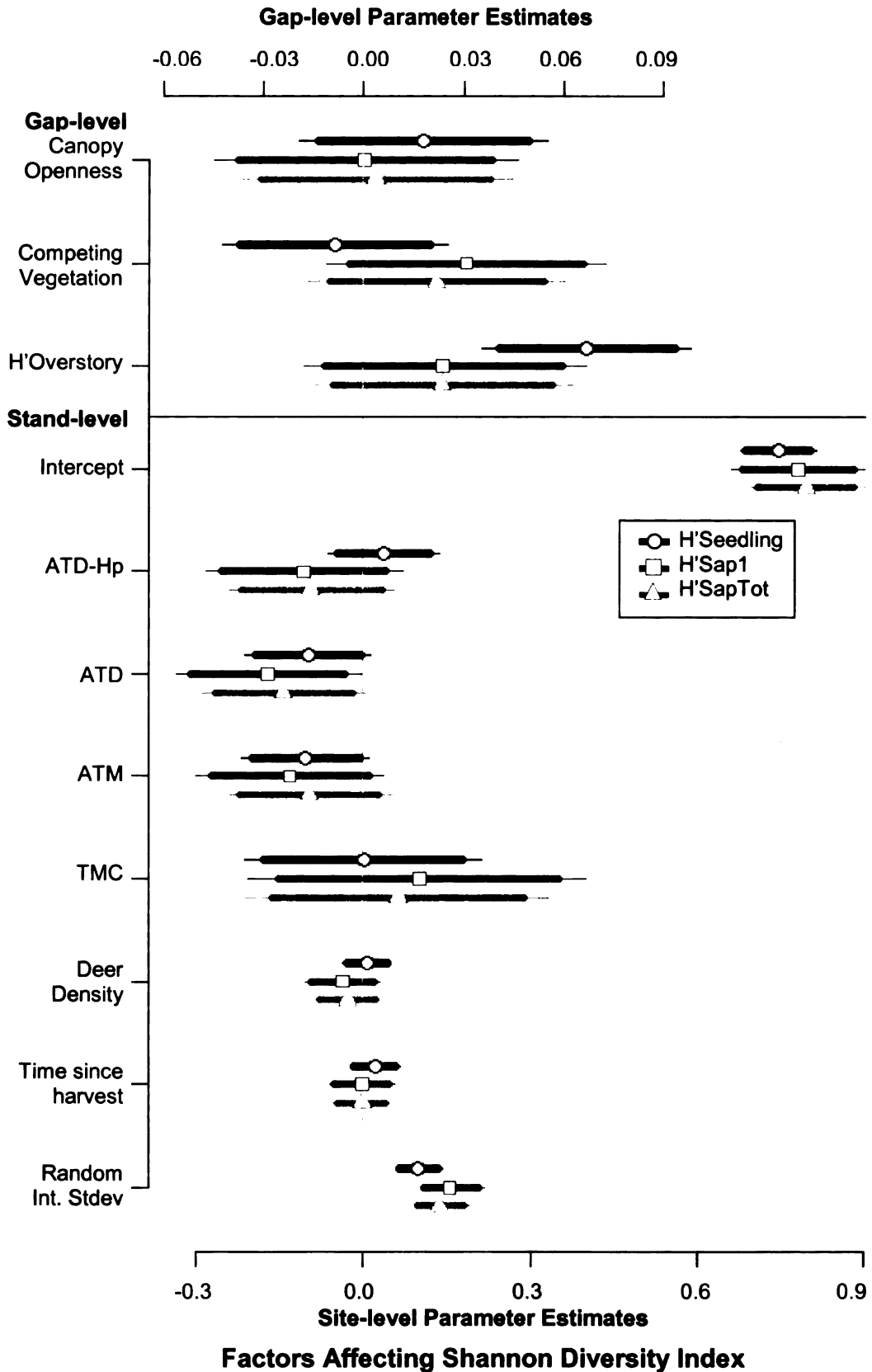
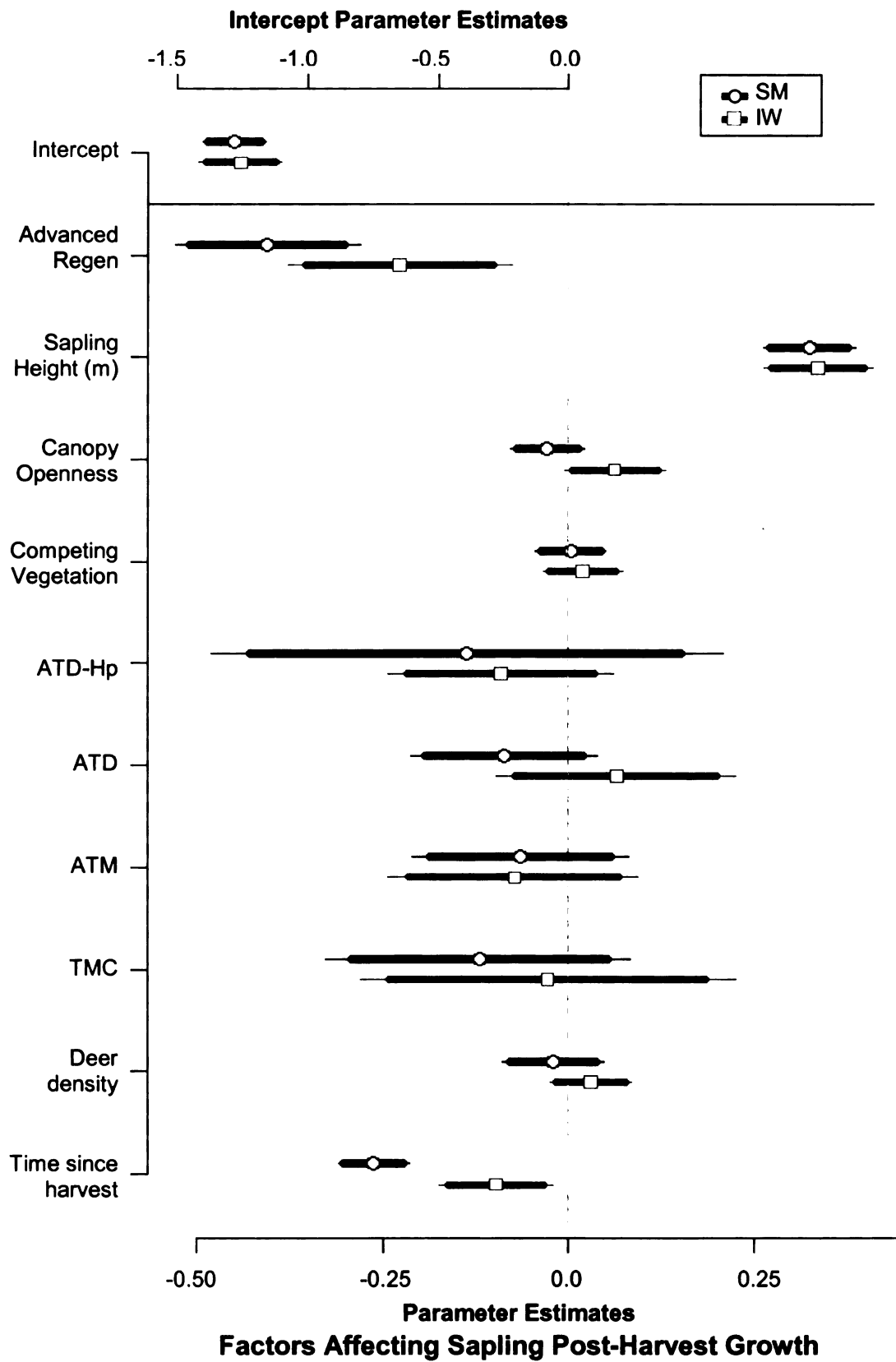


Figure 1.13. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on log transformed sapling post-harvest growth rates (m/yr mean parameter estimates, 95% credible interval (thick line), and 90% credible interval (thin line) from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in growth rate on the log scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. SM=sugar maple, IW=ironwood, Other=other species, Advanced Regen= bivariate variable indicating if a variable is advanced regeneration. Exact parameter values can be found in Appendix E, Table E.5.



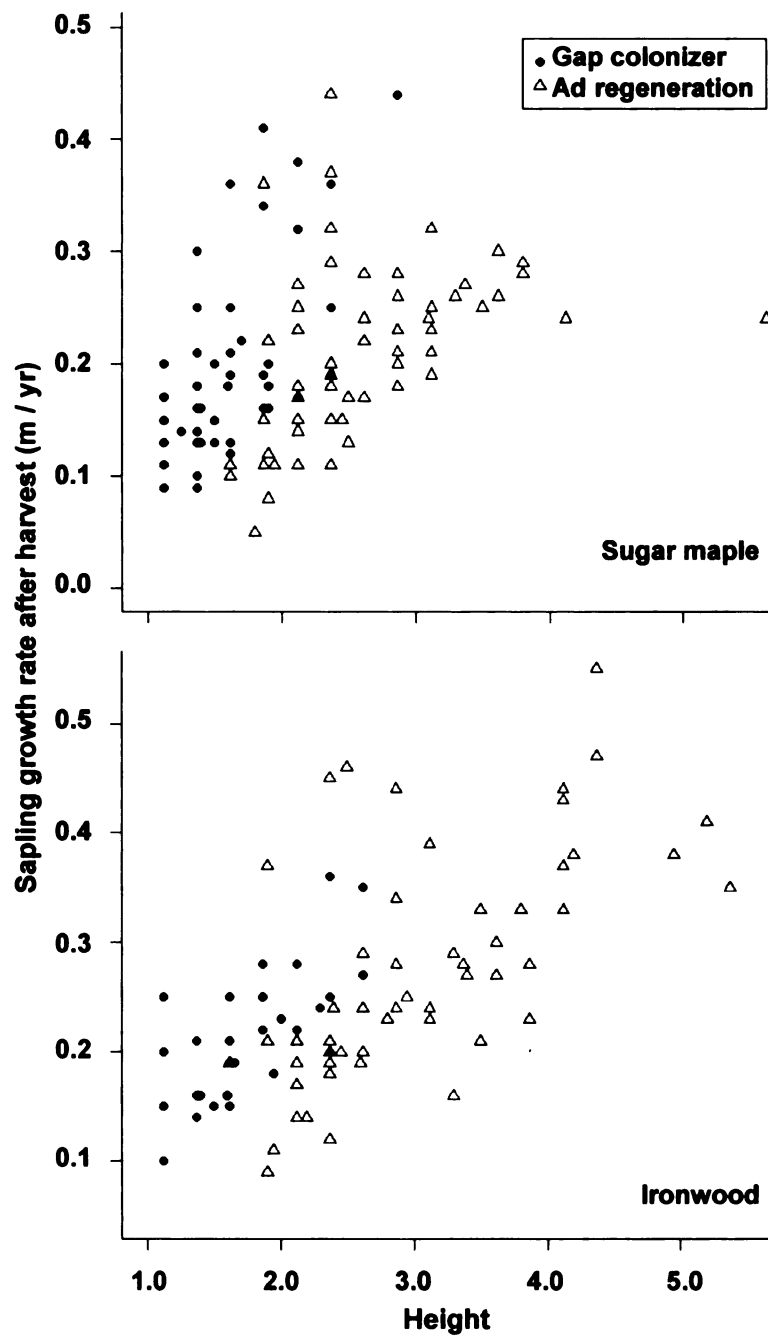


Figure 1.14. Sugar maple and ironwood sapling growth rate after harvest for gap colonizers and advanced regeneration (ad regeneration).

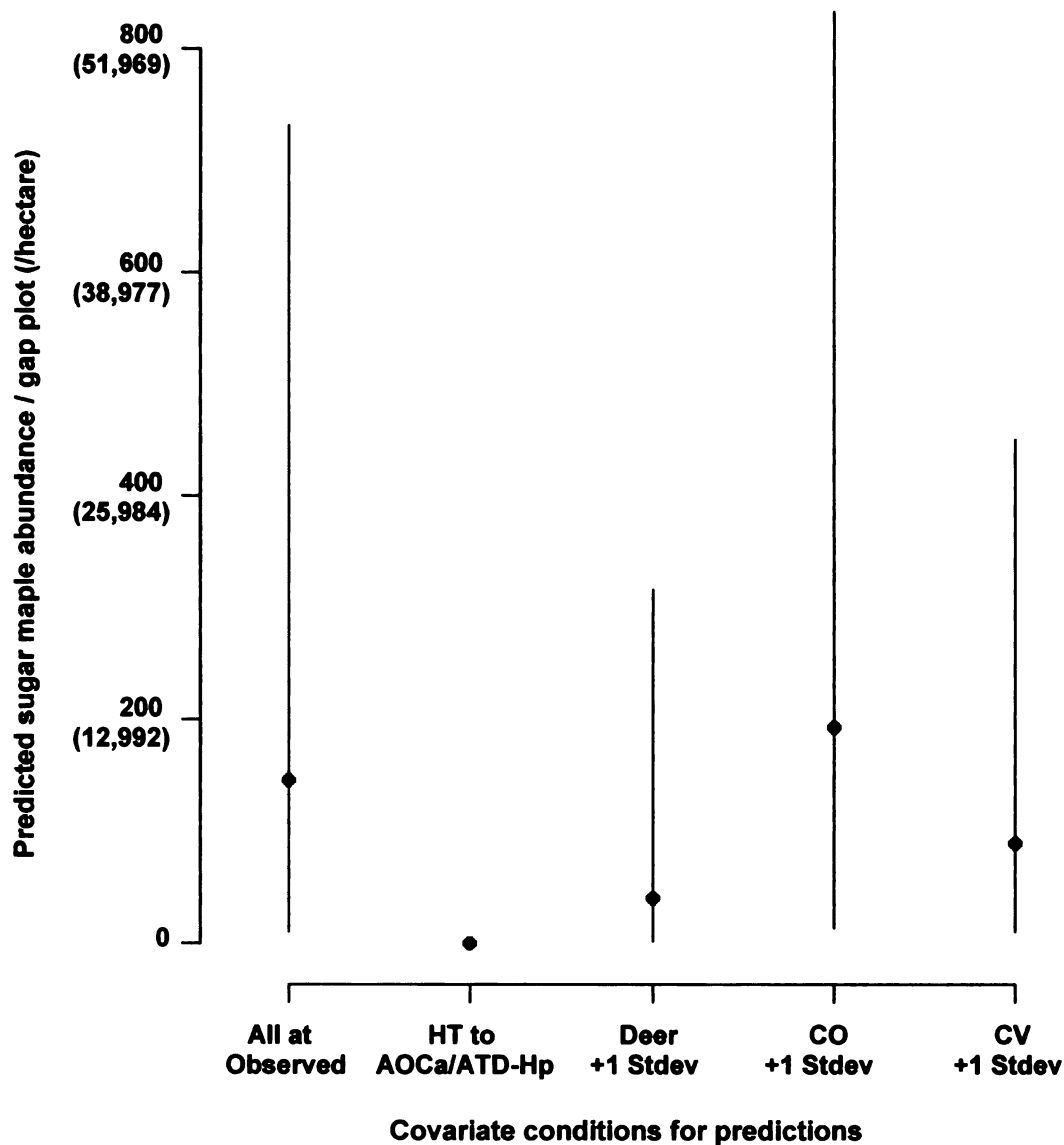


Figure 1.15. Predicting sugar maple abundance / gap plot (or / hectare of gap area) for an observed stand: median and 95% percentile predictions based on one to one simulations drawing from the posterior coefficient distributions and random effects intercept for an observed ATM stand where a gap had 387 saplings in a gap plot (25,140 / ha of gap area). Simulations were run with different covariate conditions (holding all else equal): all at observed covariate values for this gap and stand, changing Habitat Type (HT) to AOCa/ATD-Hp, increasing deer density from 4 to 16 deer/km<sup>2</sup> (observed to observed plus one standard deviation), increasing canopy openness (CO) from 5 to 12% and increasing cover of competing vegetation (CV) from 18 to 41%.

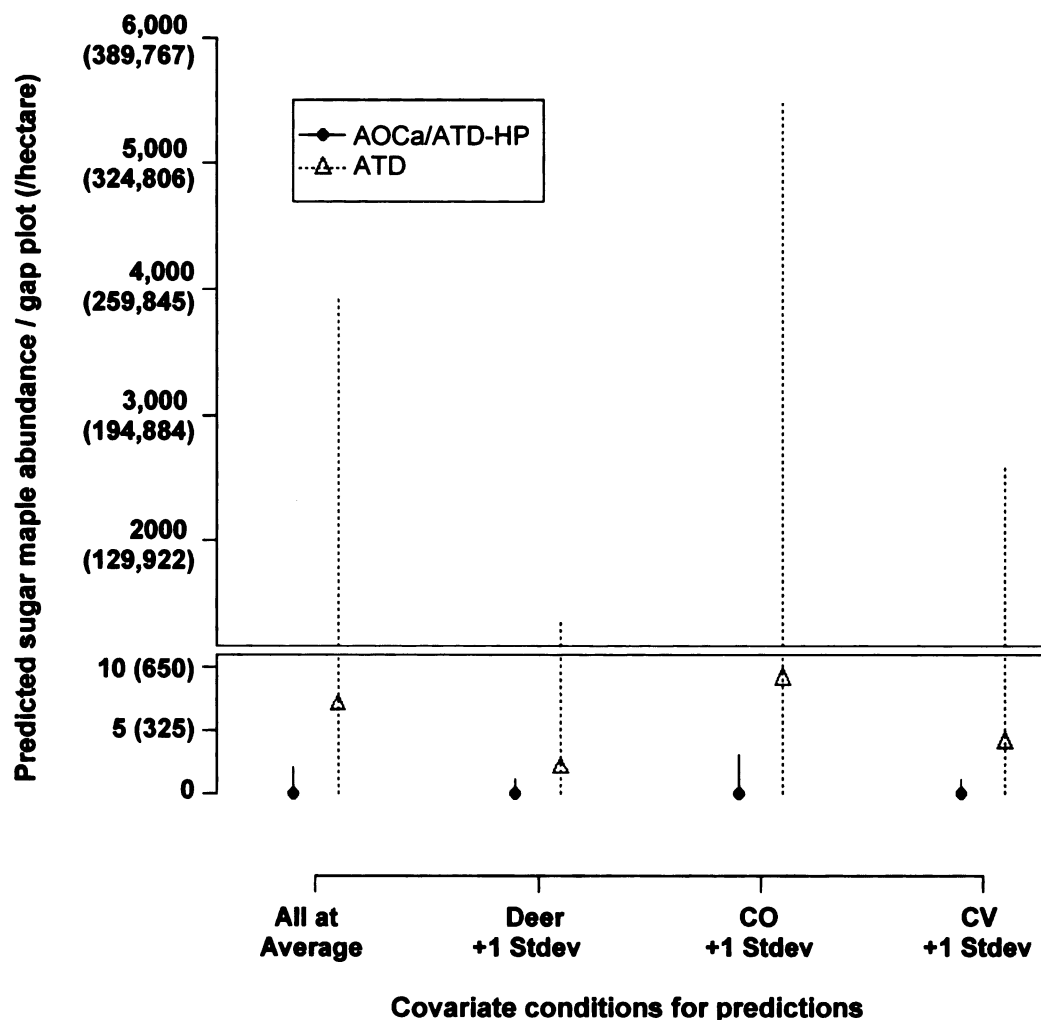
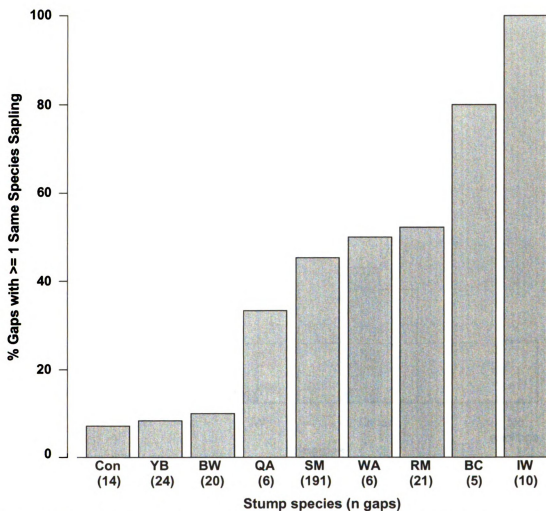
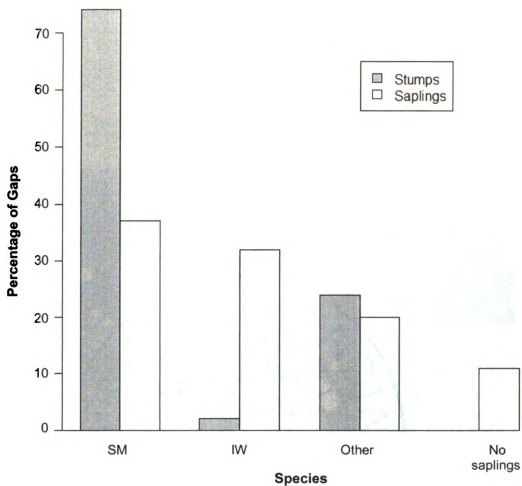


Figure 1.16. Predicting sugar maple abundance / gap plot (or / hectare of gap area) for an unmeasured stand: Median and 95% percentile predictions based on one to one simulations drawing from the posterior coefficient distributions and randomly drawing the stand-level intercept from  $\sim N(\mu, \sigma_{\alpha})$  where  $\mu$  is defined by the stand-level covariates and  $\sigma_{\alpha}$  is the random stand-level intercept stand deviation. Simulations were run with different covariate conditions (holding all else equal) for a gap at an AOCa and ATD type stand: all at average observed covariate values, increasing deer density from 14 to 26 deer/km<sup>2</sup> (average observed to average observed plus one standard deviation), increasing canopy openness (CO) from 13 to 20% and increasing cover of competing vegetation (CV) from 42 to 65%. A break was added to the y-axis so changes in the median prediction could be seen.



**Figure 1.17.** Percentage of gaps harvested 8-15 years ago where a species was removed (stump species) and there was at least one sapling of the same in the gap plot. Species codes: Con=conifer (eastern hemlock, northern white cedar, balsam fir and white spruce), YB= yellow birch, BW= American basswood, QA= quaking aspen, SM= sugar maple, RM= red maple, BC= black cherry, IW=ironwood. Numbers below species codes indicate the number of gaps where that species was removed by harvesting.



**Figure 1.18.** Percentage of gaps sugar maple (SM), ironwood (IW) or other species are the dominant stump species (highest relative basal area of stumps removed from gap) and percentage of gaps these species are the dominant sapling species (highest relative stocking level of saplings 1-7 m tall). Percentage of gaps with no saplings is also presented. N= 211 gaps harvested 8-15 years ago.

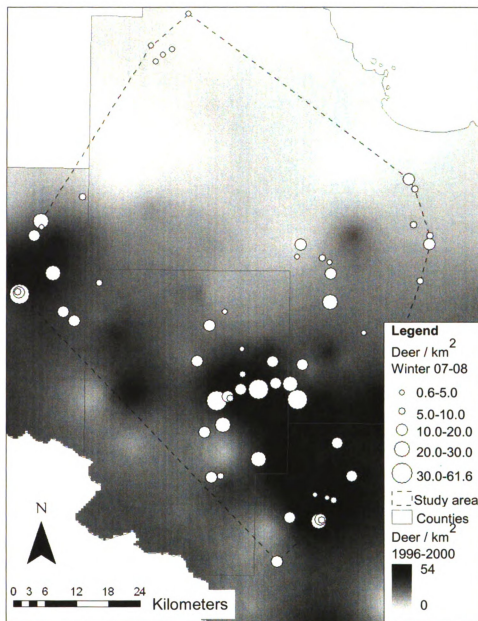
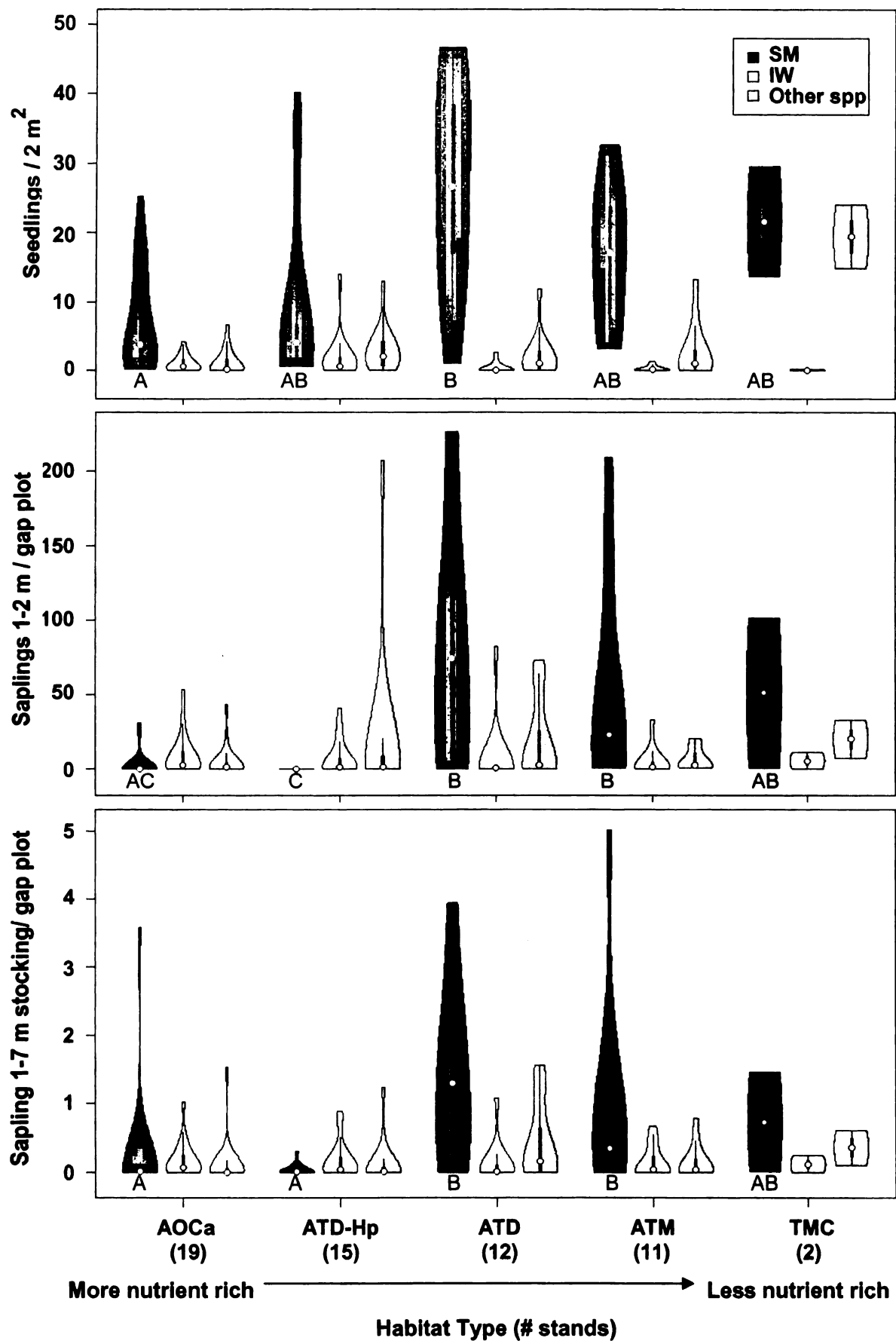


Figure 1.19. Average estimated deer density (deer / km<sup>2</sup>) from 1996-2000 created from universal kriging (Appendix B, Section B.5) of 113 observations collected by the Michigan Department of Natural Resources and deer density estimates from winter 2007-2008. Estimates for winter 2007-2008 are positively correlated with the MDNR 1996-2000 estimates (Kendall's  $\tau=0.27$ ,  $p\text{-value}=0.002$ ).

Figure 1.20. Differences in stand average seedling abundance /  $2 \text{ m}^2$ , small sapling (1-2 m) abundance / gap plot and sapling stocking levels / gap plot by Habitat Type. Gap plots were  $154 \text{ m}^2$ . Letters indicate significant differences between Habitat Types for sugar maple based on Wilcoxon signed-rank test with Bonferroni adjusted p-value. Kruskal-Wallis rank sum test indicated that sapling abundance and sapling stocking were not significantly different between Habitat Types for ironwood or other species, but it was significant for seedling of both species. However, no pairs of Habitat Types were significantly different based on the Wilcoxon test. Violin plots show distribution of values and median (white dot), interquartile range (thick vertical line) and range of values  $1.5 * \text{IQR}$  (thin vertical line).



## **Chapter 2: Snow depth, deciduous-lowland conifer forest edges and deer density affect seedling browse damage**

### **Abstract**

Restoration of eastern hemlock (*Tsuga canadensis* (L.) Carrière) and eastern white pine (*Pinus strobus* L.) to forests in the Great Lakes region are priority conservation goals. I planted white pine, hemlock and white spruce (*Picea glauca* (Moench) Voss) seedlings in harvest gaps within northern hardwood stands in the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan to 1) explore the efficacy of planting efforts in areas with high winter deer densities and 2) improve our understanding of factors affecting deer herbivory at the stand- and gap-level. Results show that white spruce seedlings may successfully reestablish with planting efforts because this species was virtually un-browsed, but white pine and hemlock will not reestablish without protection from deer. Stand-level percentages of seedlings browsed increased with estimated winter deer density and decreased with snow depth and stand-average gap distance to lowland conifer. Non-linearity was observed in the relationship between browse pressure and estimated deer density, emphasizing the importance of maintaining deer densities below a threshold level when the goal is to protect browse-preferred understory vegetation. Snow sheltered seedlings from deer, but relationships between snow depth and estimated stand deer density were not observed. Evidence of deer gap-use corresponded with increased gap-level percentage of seedlings browsed, but contrary to expectations, deer-use within a stand was higher in gaps farther from lowland conifer. The relationship between browse pressure and estimated deer density supports the use of the pellet count technique for estimating deer densities. However, monitoring deer browse directly on seedlings and saplings provides better insight into impacts of herbivory.

## 2.1 Introduction

Hemlock-white pine-northern hardwood forests in the Great Lake Regions underwent dramatic transformations in the mid 1800s to early 1900s when logging virtually eliminated eastern hemlock (*Tsuga canadensis* (L.) Carrière) and eastern white pine (*Pinus strobus* L.) from the landscape (Whitney 1987; Stearns 1997; MDNR 2006). Hemlock has not been replaced by natural regeneration due to seed source limitations (Mladenoff and Stearns 1993), lack of suitable seed beds (Mladenoff and Stearns 1993; Rooney et al 2000; Marx and Walters 2008), browsing by white-tailed deer (Swift 1949; Graham 1954; Rooney et al 2000), unsuitable climatic conditions (Mladenoff and Stearns 1993) and light limitations (Rooney et al 2000). White pine seedlings and saplings are still found widespread throughout northern hardwood-conifer forests where seed sources are available (Carleton et al 1996) but declines have been observed (MDNR 2006). The absence of a seed source greatly limits the regeneration of this species (Ahlgren 1976; Dovčiak et al 2003), but so does the availability of suitable seed beds (Smith 1951; Dovčiak et al 2003), light availability (Smith 1951; Krueger and Puettmann 2004), browsing by white-tailed deer (Swift 1949; Saunders and Puettmann 1999; Krueger and Puettmann 2004), competition from understory vegetation (Ahlgren 1976; Dovčiak et al 2003; George and Bazzaz 1999) and damage from insects and disease (Ahlgren 1976; Krueger and Puettmann 2004).

Increasing the cover of mesic conifer<sup>1</sup> stands and re-establishing these species as components in hardwood forests are common conservation goals in the Great Lakes Region (Thorne 1992; Crow et al 1994; OMNR 2003; MDNR 2006). On State land in the

---

<sup>1</sup> Mesic conifers include eastern hemlock, eastern white pine, balsam fir (*Abies balsamea* (L.) P. Mill.) and white spruce (*Picea glauca* (Moench) Voss)

Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan, white pine and hemlock planting efforts are underway (Herman et al 2004). It is predicted that increased cover of pure conifer and mixed deciduous-conifer stands will improve habitat for bird species (Herman et al 2004) like the blackburnian warbler (*Dendroica fusca*) which feeds and nests in hemlock trees (Kendeigh 1945). Increasing the abundance of conifer cover could also reduce suitability of white-tailed deer (*Odocoileus virginianus* Zimmermann) summer range (Kohn and Mooty 1971; Tierson et al 1985; Felix et al 2004) and increase cover of winter habitat (Graham 1954; Verme 1965; Ozoga 1968; Blouch 1984), resulting in smaller herds dispersed over larger wintering areas (Herman et al 2004).

Heavy deer browsing in the Great Lakes region can impact the efficacy of white pine and hemlock restoration efforts (Rooney et al 2000). Consideration of climatic conditions and landscape contexts that affect deer behavior and local densities could improve restoration success. Snow depth and lowland conifer stands influence deer migration and distribution in the winter months. Many deer in the Upper Peninsula of Michigan migrate on average 10.9-20.3 km (depending on winter severity), and as far as about 50 km, from summer to winter ranges where snow depth is lower and availability of winter habitat is greater (Verme 1973; VanDeelen et al 1998). Winter white-tailed deer densities in northern hardwood stands have been found to decrease with increasing distance to lowland conifer, likely due to the importance of conifers for shelter (Millington et al 2009, *in review*). Within deciduous forests, deer browse on seedlings and saplings may increase with proximity to lowland conifer stands.

The most direct method of assessing the impact of deer herbivory on seedlings and saplings is to monitor browse damage, but it is also important to establish reliable

estimates of deer density for informing deer management and modeling the relationships between deer density and herbivory. Fecal pellet surveys are a relatively simple and inexpensive method of assessing relative local deer density (Hill 2001; Langdon 2001) and positive relationships between pellet count metrics and deer density have been empirically supported (Neff 1968; Bailey and Putman 1981; Forsyth et al 2007). However, others have found poor performance of the pellet count method compared to population estimates from aerial surveys (Fuller 1991) and higher variability in pellet count population estimates compared to mark-resighting and distance sampling techniques (Langdon 2001). Deer density estimates derived from pellet counts can be biased because defecation rates are correlated with forage intake, forage moisture content and percentage of young in the herd, and they can be affected by sampling design and observer error (Neff 1968). Regardless, they remain the cheapest and most implementable method available for assessing relative differences between deer density at the stand-scale across a large geographic area.

I planted mesic conifer seedlings within northern hardwood stands in the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan to test the following hypotheses: H1) seedling browse damage will be higher at stands with lower snow depth, shorter distance to lowland conifer and higher winter deer density and H2) within a stand, seedling browse damage will increase with proximity to lowland conifer where winter deer-use is higher. The results of this study can aid in the development of effective mesic conifer restoration efforts and provide insights into the relationship between estimated deer densities and browse pressure.

## 2.2 Methods

### 2.2.1 Study area

This study occurred within 34 northern hardwood stands across Dickinson, Iron, Marquette and Menominee counties in the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan (Figure 2.1). Stands were owned by Plum Creek Timber Company Inc. (PCT), GMO Renewable Resources Inc. (managed by American Forest Management Inc. (AFM)), and the State of Michigan and had been selection harvested from 2003 to 2007. The study area corresponds with that for the ongoing Western Upper Peninsula Economic-Ecological Modeling Project (Laurent et al 2005; LeBouton et al 2005; Racevskis and Lupi 2006; Millington et al 2009 *in review*). This area was selected for the domination of forest cover, the relative absence of agriculture and urban or suburban developments, and the natural variation in deer densities and snow depth (Doepker et al 1994; Shi et al 2006).

Northern hardwood forests are found throughout the area on upland topography, such as drumlins, created by glacial activity and coniferous forests are prevalent in lowland areas. Aspen and mixed upland cover types are also present. Coniferous forests are composed of mixes of northern white cedar (*Thuja occidentalis* L.), black spruce (*Picea mariana* (Mill.) Britten & et al.), tamarack (*Larix laricina* (Du Roi) K. Koch) and balsam fir (*Abies balsamea* (L.) Mill.) and northern hardwood forests are dominated by sugar maple (*Acer saccharum* Marsh), with various components of American basswood (*Tilia americana* L.), yellow birch (*Betula alleghaniensis* Britton), red maple (*Acer rubrum* L.), white ash (*Fraxinus americana* L.) and other minor species including eastern hemlock and white pine.

Stands were located within ecoregion sub-sections VIII.3.1 (loamy ground moraines and drumlin ridges), VIII.3.2 (poorly drained outwash plains), IX.1 (steep bedrock knobs, outwash plains and sandy ground moraines) and IX.3.2 (irregular ice-disintegration topography) (Albert 1995). Section VIII is underlain by Cambrian-age sandstone and Paleozoic limestone, shale and dolomite whereas section IX is underlain by highly resistant igneous and metamorphic bedrock of the Precambrian Shield.

Annual snow fall varies from 161 cm in the southern portion of the Western Upper Peninsula to 434 cm in the northern portion (National Climatic Data Center 2009). Snowfall is higher in the northern parts of the Upper Peninsula due to lake-effect snow that develops when cooler air masses from the north move over the warmer waters of Lake Superior (Jerome 2006).

### ***2.2.2 Field methods***

Six seedlings of hemlock, white pine and white spruce were planted in ten harvest gaps at each stand for a total of 2,040 seedlings per species in November 2007. Hemlock seedlings were the tallest (mean 34.3 cm, stdev 7.1 cm) followed by white pine (26.7 cm, 7 cm) and white spruce (20.8 cm, 4.9 cm). Hemlock and white spruce were two year old containerized seedlings and white pines were two year old bare root seedlings. If lowland conifer stands could be identified in the surrounding landscape, gaps were selected at various distances from the hardwood-conifer edge. The planted seedlings were not individually marked so as not to attract or deter deer, but within gaps they were planted in straight lines and maps were made of the orientation of gaps within stands to facilitate relocation.

Stands were revisited to monitor browse damage and perform pellet surveys from late April to early May 2008 after snow melted and before cover of spring ephemerals would hinder relocation of planted seedlings. Browse damage for each hemlock seedling was qualitatively classified into one of five categories: no browsing (0), light browsing (1), moderate browsing (2), heavy browsing (3) and complete removal of needles (4). White pine and white spruce seedlings were marked as browsed or unbrowsed because natural variation in the size and branching patterns of the seedlings made it difficult to consistently categorize browse damage. Browse damage caused by cottontail rabbits (*Sylvilagus floridanus* J. A. Allen) or snowshoe hares (*Lepus americanus* Erxleben) was possible, but likely negligible. Rabbits browse minimally on hemlock (Todd 1927; Hough 1949), white pine and spruce (Swihart and Yahner 1983), and hare browse preference is only moderate for white pine and low for spruce and hemlock (Telfer 1972).

To estimate stand-level winter deer density, pellet groups were counted within ten 50 m by 4 m transects oriented in an hour glass shape (LeBouton et al 2005) (Appendix B, Section B.1). A handheld GPS unit was used to determine the UTM Northing and Easting for the center of the pellet surveys. Transects were double counted with different observers to improve accuracy (Jenkins and Manly 2008). The mean pellet group counts from all ten transects were used to calculate deer density following the methods of Hill 2001 (Appendix B, Section B.1). Visible pellets were those above leaf litter deposited in November 2007, so the estimate of deer density corresponds to deer presence in the late fall, winter and early spring months. I term the estimate “winter deer density” although deer depositing fecal pellets in northern hardwood stands likely did so while migrating between summer and winter ranges (i.e. in November and April).

Pellet groups were also counted within one 10 m by 4 m transect located parallel to the planting lines through the center of each planted gap. Pellet groups counted along these transects were not incorporated into the stand-level deer density estimate. Gap pellet group counts (PGC) were used as estimates of fine-scale differences in deer-use of the planted gaps. A deer has a higher chance of defecating in an area where it spends more time; however, the absence of pellet groups does not necessarily correspond to the absence of deer-use. Gap-PGC were not converted into deer densities because they were quantified in such small areas that they could not reasonably be scaled up to a larger area.

A subset of 19 stands was revisited in late April and early May 2009 to reassess browse damage. Eleven stands were selected because percentage of hemlock seedlings severely browsed (category 3 or 4) was <50% in 2008 and eight stands were selected because distance to lowland conifer (DLC) estimates could be obtained for them (DLC could also be found at three stands selected for hemlock browse criteria). Hemlock seedlings were only reassessed at stands with low 2008 browse pressure because severe browse damage made relocation difficult elsewhere. Seedlings with completely desiccated foliage were noted as was their browse status. White spruce seedling browse status was not reassessed in 2009 because browse was infrequent the first year.

Distance to lowland conifer (DLC) could only be determined for thirteen stands due to incomplete stand-level data across the study area. At these stands a Trimble® Asset Surveyor<sup>TM</sup> model TSC1 GPS receiver and datalogger system with built in real-time differential correction capabilities was used to determine the location of each planted gap. GPS locations were not determined for four gaps at one stand due to battery failure. Distance to lowland conifer for each gap was determined using ERSI ArcMap

v9.2 and digitized stand-level data provided by MDNR, AFM and PCT. Although the Integrated Forest Monitoring, Assessment and Prescription (IFMAP) project provides forest classification for the entire Upper Peninsula (Donovan 2005), its accuracy has been challenged even for distinguishing conifer and deciduous cover types (Linden 2006).

The number of weeks from November 1<sup>st</sup> 2007 to April 30<sup>th</sup> 2008 when the snow depth at each stand was deeper than 40 cm was found from daily 1-km resolution maps created by the National Snow and Ice Data Center's Snow Data Assimilation System (SNODAS) (Barrett 2003; NOHRSC 2004). Deer often avoid areas with snow depths greater than 40 cm (Poole and Mowat 2005) because it hinders their movement (Kelsall 1969), and snow depths approaching this threshold can initiate their migration to winter range (Tierson et al 1985). This depth also corresponds closely with the 90<sup>th</sup> percentile height of planted hemlock seedlings (41.5 cm). The estimate represents the number of weeks when snow depth was prohibitive to deer movement and provided cover for planted seedlings.

### ***2.2.3 Statistical analysis***

The goals of this study were to determine browse damage on planted conifer seedlings, quantify relationships between deer densities, deep snow weeks (DSW) and DLC and determine their effects on browse pressure. Variation in the percentage of browsed white spruce was low within and between stands, so analysis focused on the percentage of white pine and hemlock seedlings browsed at the stand-level and at the gap level. Since almost all hemlock seedlings showed signs of browse, hemlock seedlings were classified into two categories: un-browsed / minimally browsed (browse category 0,

1 or 2) and severely browsed (category 3 or 4). Hereafter, “browsed” is used to refer to browsed white pine and severely browse hemlock seedlings.

To test hypothesis 1, non-parametric Kendall’s tau correlations were calculated between stand-level percentage of seedlings browsed in 2008 and stand-mean gap-DLC, stand-mean gap-PGC, stand deer density and stand deep snow weeks (DSW). Correlation between percent browsed in 2009 was only found with stand-mean gap-DLC because gap-PGC, deer density and DSW were only found for winter 2007-2008.

To address hypotheses 1 and 2, multilevel logistic regression models were developed for hemlock and white pine to predict the gap-level percentage of seedlings browsed in 2008 based on stand and gap-level characteristics. Models included a random stand-level intercept to account for the hierarchical structure of the data (gaps nested within stands) and to incorporate information about the clustering to produce estimates of standard errors that account for non-independence (Goldstein 1995). In order to determine the effects of differences in gap-level PGC and DLC within stands on gap-level percentage of seedlings browsed (i.e. to isolate the effects of variation in gap-level PGC and DLC within stands instead of between stands), these variables were centered on the stand-mean (Enders and Tofghi 2007).

The number of seedlings browsed in gap  $i$  at stand  $j$  ( $y_{ij}$ ), out of  $n_{ij}$  seedlings relocated in 2008 was modeled as a binomial process  $y_{ij} \sim \text{Bin}(p_{ij}, n_{ij})$ . The percentage of browsed seedlings ( $p_{ij}$ ) was a function of the inverse logit of  $X_i\beta + \alpha_j$ , where  $X_i$ ’s were gap-level covariates. The random stand-level intercept ( $\alpha_j$ ) came from a normal distribution  $\sim N(\gamma_0 + Z_j\gamma, \sigma^2_\alpha)$  where  $Z_j$ ’s were stand-level covariates. Five models were

developed with different gap-level ( $X_i$ 's) and stand-level ( $Z_j$ 's) covariates (Table 2.1): 1) null model (stand-level random intercept only), 2) stand deer density and DSW, 3) stand-mean centered gap-PGC and DSW, 4) stand-mean centered gap-PGC, gap-DLC and DSW and 5) stand-mean centered gap-DLC only. Variables were put on more comparable scales to improve convergence; deer density was rescaled to 10's of deer / km<sup>2</sup>, gap-DLC was rescaled to 10's of meters and stand deer density and DSW were grand mean centered.

Models were run with WinBUGS v.1.4.3 (Spiegelhalter et al 2003) (see code Appendix C, Section C.4) through R v.2.9.1 with the package R2WinBUGS (Sturtz et al 2005) (see code Appendix C, Section C.5). Three parallel chains with dispersed randomly selected starting values were run for 40,000 iterations with a burn-in of 10,000 and a thinning rate of 5. Models were run with a uniform prior (range 0-100) for the standard deviation of the random stand-level intercept. The random intercept standard deviation was insensitive to prior specification (Appendix B; Section B.4). A noninformative prior distribution (Normal $\sim(\mu=0, \sigma^2=10,000)$ ) was used for gap-level and stand-level coefficients (Clark 2007; Bolker et al 2009).

Gap-level percentages of seedlings browsed were overdispersed as is often the case with count data used in logistic regression (i.e. variance is greater than explained by the model) (Gelman and Hill 2007). However, the random stand-level intercept helped account for the overdispersion in the data. Pearson residuals were closer to a standard normal distribution  $N\sim(\mu=0, \sigma^2=1)$  with the inclusion of a stand-level random effect ( $N\sim(-0.01, 1.37)$  vs  $\sim N(0.00, 2.66)$  without stand-level random effect for pine and  $N\sim(0.01, 1.64)$  vs  $N\sim(0.02, 2.99)$  for hemlock null models).

Deviance Information Criterion (DIC), a method of assessing model performance in terms of fit and complexity based on the posterior mean deviance ( $-2 \times \log(\text{likelihood})$ ) and the effective number of parameters (Spiegelhalter et al 2002), was compared between models to determine if predictor variables improved model performance. A decrease in DIC by 5 or more indicates support for better model performance.

Convergence was diagnosed using the R package coda (Plummer et al 2009) with the Gelman-Rubin diagnostic and the Raftery-Lewis diagnostic. All models showed strong evidence of convergence (Appendix D, Tables D.9 and D.10).

## **2.3 Results**

### ***2.3.1 Summary of gap- and stand-level variables***

The number of deep snow weeks (DSW) varied from 0 to 12.6 (Table 2.2) and was negatively correlated with stand-mean gap-PGC and positively with Northing (Table 2.3). Stand-mean centered gap-PGC varied from 4.1 pellet groups less than the stand mean to 10.9 groups more than the stand mean. Stand-mean centered gap-DLC varied from 161 m less than the stand mean to 156 m more than the stand mean. Non-centered gap-PGC and DLC were not significantly correlated, but stand-mean centered gap-PGC and DLC were positively correlated (Figure 2.2). Stand-level deer density estimates ranged from 4.1 to 64.5 deer / km<sup>2</sup> and were not correlated with Northing or DSW.

### ***2.3.2 Percentage browsed varied between species and increased over time***

Over 97% of planted seedlings for each species were relocated in 2008 (Table 2.4). Two spruce, eight white pine and 15 hemlock seedlings were found pulled out of the ground, so some seedlings may have been completely removed from the gaps by deer.

Percentage of seedlings browsed varied by species (Kruskal-Wallis  $\chi^2 = 86.8$ ,  $p$ -value  $< 0.001$ ), with browsing lowest on white spruce, intermediate on white pine and highest on hemlock (Figure 2.3). Over winter 2007-2008, 92% of hemlock, 30% of white pine and 2% of white spruce seedlings were browsed (Table 2.4). Sixty percent of hemlock seedlings were severely browsed (category 3 or 4).

In 2009, relocation of seedlings was more difficult, likely due to increased incidence of browse and death from apparent desiccation (Table 2.5). In 2009, 9% of hemlock and 21% of white pine relocated had completely desiccated foliage. Percentage of seedlings browsed for both white pine and hemlock increased at all resurveyed stands from 2008 to 2009. Percentage of hemlock seedlings severely browsed increased from less than 50% to over 50% for all but one resurveyed stand between spring 2008 and spring 2009, and increased to as high as 96% at one stand.

### ***2.3.3 Deer density, deep snow weeks, deer gap-use and distance to lowland conifer affect stand-level percentages of browsed seedlings (H1)***

Stand deer density estimates were positively correlated with the percentage of hemlock seedlings browsed ( $p < 0.10$ ) (Figure 2.4), but not with percentage of pine seedlings browsed (Figure 2.5). The impact of deer on percentage of severely browsed hemlock was nonlinear, with percentage browsed rising rapidly with increasing deer density. One stand was the exception with high estimated deer density (38 deer / km<sup>2</sup>) and low browse pressure (13%), potentially because there were 9 weeks of deep snow at this stand. Stand average gap-PGC (related to deer gap-use) was not correlated with hemlock browse, but showed a similar pattern to the relationship between deer density and percent severely browsed hemlock. Stand average gap-PGC was positively correlated

with white pine percent browsed. Percentages of planted hemlock and white pine browsed were negatively correlated with DSW. Hemlock browsing was greater than 45% at all stands where DSW was less than 8, but as low as 3% where DSW was greater. Stand-level percentages of seedlings browsed for both species were negatively correlated with stand average gap-DLC. This relationship strengthened between 2008 and 2009 for white pine.

#### ***2.3.4 Deep snow weeks, deer gap-use and distance to lowland conifer affect gap-level percentages of browsed seedlings (H1 and H2)***

Stand deer density did not affect gap-level percentages of seedlings browsed for either species (Model 2, Table 2.6). In contrast, the gap-level percentage of hemlock and white pine seedlings browsed decreased with increasing DSW and increased with increasing stand-mean centered gap-PGC (Model 3). Compared to the null model (Model 1), inclusion of snow and gap-PGC improved model performance for hemlock and marginally for white pine. However, differences in predicted percentages between Model 3 and the null model (Model 1) were very minor for both species (Figure 2.6).

Distance to lowland conifer and DSW for both species, and gap-PGC for pine, were unrelated to percentage of seedlings browsed for the subset of stands where DLC could be quantified (Model 4, Table 2.7). In the univariate model with DLC (Model 5), increasing stand mean-centered gap-DLC corresponded to increased gap-level percentages of seedlings browsed for hemlock, but not for pine.

Based on simulations using parameters from the model with mean-centered gap-DLC and stand DSW (Model 3), increasing the number of DSW from 6.6 (the average observed) to 7.6 decreased the mean predicted percentage of severely browsed hemlock

seedlings in a gap by 2%, and the percentage of browsed white pine by 1% (Table 2.8). Larger decreases in the percentages were predicted (15% for hemlock and 8% for white pine) when number of DSW increased from 6.6 to 12.6 (the maximum observed). Increasing the gap-PGC by one over the stand-mean increased the predicted percentage of severely browsed hemlock by 4% and the percentage of browsed white pine by 1%. Larger increases in the percentage (24% for hemlock and 14% for pine) were predicted when the gap-PGC increased by eleven over the stand-mean. For all simulations, the 95% quantiles for the predictions were large due to uncertainty in the stand-level random intercept.

Based on simulations using parameters from the model with only DLC (Model 5) for hemlock, the mean gap-level percentage of severely browsed seedlings showed no significant increase if gap-DLC increased 10 m from the stand-mean. If gap-DLC increased 150 m from the stand-mean, the probability of severe browse increased from 56% (95% quantiles for the predictions: 3-99%) to 66% (5-99%).

## **2.4 Discussion**

A high percentage of planted hemlock and white pine seedlings, both deer browse-preferred winter foods (Blouch 1984), were browsed over a two year period in northern hardwood forests. White spruce, a last resort forage species for deer (Blouch 1984; Dumont et al 2005), was only minimally browsed. Percentages of browsed seedling were negatively related to abiotic stand characteristics (i.e. length of time when snow depth prohibits deer movement and shelters seedlings) and local landscape context (i.e. distance to lowland conifer).

***2.4.1 Hypothesis 1: the percentage of browsed seedlings will be higher at stands where snow depth and distance to lowland conifer are lower and winter deer density is greater***

Stand-level percentage of hemlock seedlings severely browsed was positively, but non-linearly, related to estimated deer density. Non-linear relationships between deer density and browse impacts have been reported for hemlock and some hardwood species (Rooney and Waller 2003; Eschtruth and Battles 2008). Variability in deer density estimates from the pellet count technique (Langdon 2001) may contribute to the relative weakness in the relationship between browse pressure and deer density. The relationship between stand-level percentage of white pine browsed and deer appears sensitive to pellet-count transect location and length; it was not significant with stand-level deer density estimated from pellet counts observed along long transects radiating from a random center but was positive with stand-average gap-pellet group counts observed along short transects in areas with expected deer use. Both transect length and distribution of transects are important considerations when designing fecal pellet surveys (Neff 1968). Counting pellets in patches where deer use may be higher (i.e. in harvest gaps with greater forage availability) would likely over-estimate stand deer densities, but might assist with monitoring relationships between relative deer density and herbivory at a finer spatial scale.

Stand-level percentages of white pine and hemlock seedlings browsed decreased with increasing length of deep snow weeks and stand-average gap-distance to lowland conifer. Browse pressure could be lower at stands where snow depth is > 40 cm for a longer portion of the winter because: 1) snow provides cover to seedlings from deer, 2) many deer migrate south to winter range where snow depth is lower (Verme 1973;

Tierson et al 1985; Blouch 1984; VanDeelen 1998) and 3) deep snow and winter severity cause deer to alter their foraging behavior and habitat selection to conserve energy (Ozoga and Verme 1970; Pauley et al 1993; Dumont et al 2005; Poole and Mowat 2005).

Both deep snow weeks and deer density varied across northern hardwood stands and had the anticipated relationships with stand-level percentage of seedlings browsed, but were not negatively correlated with each other as was expected. I found a negative relationship between deer density and snow depth in this region across a larger study area that included more stands and extended farther north (Chapter 1). The latitudinal gradient of the stands for this planting study and the number of stands measured may not be great enough to capture the inverse relationship between deer density and snow fall, given high variability in pellet count derived estimates of deer density (Langdon 2001).

Unlike deer density, stand-average gap-pellet group counts (i.e. deer gap-use) were negatively correlated with deep snow weeks. It is possible that the relationship between snow and deer was captured by counting pellet groups in gaps because deer might avoid gaps where snow depth is greater due to lower interception of snow by tree branches.

The observed relationship between stand-level browse and distance to lowland conifer support previous findings that deer density is lower in stands farther from lowland conifer stands (Millington et al 2009 *in review*). The correlation between deer density estimates and stand-average gap-distance to lowland conifer was not significant in this study, likely because distance to lowland conifer could only be determined for thirteen stands.

#### ***2.4.3 Hypothesis 2: percentage of seedlings browsed will increase with proximity to lowland conifer where deer-use is higher***

Browsing of hemlock and white pine seedlings increased with deer gap-use (stand-mean centered gap-pellet group counts) and with gap distance to lowland conifer (stand-mean centered gap-level distance to lowland conifer) for hemlock, but not pine. Deer gap-use was positively correlated with gap distance to lowland conifer. The later findings are contrary to the hypothesis that deer browse would be lower in gaps farther from lowland conifer. Deer confinement to conifer stands increases with winter severity (Ozoga and Gysel 1972), so deer foraging may not have been limited to gaps near conifer stands during this fairly average winter (MDNR 2008). Also, deer disperse farther from habitat edges when highly-browse preferred species are available (Williamson and Hirth 1985). Within stands, planted gaps may not have been located sufficiently far from each other to infer small-scale difference in deer use of a stand. Daily winter movement for a deer can be 341 to 1,650 meters (Heezen and Tester 1967) and the farthest distance between gaps within a stand was 730 m (average maximum distance was 370 m). Within one day, one deer could have visited all gaps at a stand.

The relationships between browse, gap distance to lowland conifer and deer gap-use could also be an artifact of the uncertainty in the gap pellet group counts and the small sample size for gap distance to lowland conifer. Gap pellet group counts were quantified in small areas and was not a perfect estimate of deer use of a gap (i.e. there were no gap-pellet groups in 40% of gaps where there was evidence of deer browse).

#### ***2.4.4 Management implications***

The efficacy of efforts to restore hemlock and white pine in northern hardwood stands with replanting may be minimal in areas with high deer densities ( $> 15$  deer /  $\text{km}^2$ ). Hemlock seedlings will not grow into larger size classes unless protected from white-tailed deer. White pine browse was relatively low the first year of planting, but increased to fifty percent at re-surveyed stands after the second year. Many white pine seedlings desiccated after two winters and one growing seasons, often independent of browse damage, so planting containerized seedlings or taller saplings may increase white pine survival. Planting more seedlings per acre may also satiate deer browse, however, this comes at a higher cost and risk. Last-resort browse species, such as white spruce or balsam fir (Blouch 1984; Dumont et al 2005) may be the only mesic conifers that can successfully reestablish in areas with high deer density.

Seedling browse was lower at stands with lower deer densities ( $< 15$  deer /  $\text{km}^2$ ) that were farther from lowland conifer ( $> 150$  m) and covered by deep snow for a longer portion of the winter ( $> 6$  weeks). Using these criteria to select planting sites may improve success. Snow cover will only confer protection to small seedlings, so it may also be necessary to plant seedlings on microsites that serve as refugia from deer, such as slash piles or tip-up mounds (Grisez 1960; Krueger and Peterson 2006), to use plastic tree shelters (Ward and Stephens 1995), or to plant larger seedlings with bud caps (Saunders and Puettmann 1999). Seedlings may need protection until they reach 125 cm, past which point terminal leader browsing by deer decreases (Saunders and Puettmann 1999).

Quality deer management that maintains populations in balance with their habitat (Frawley 2005) could benefit mesic conifer restoration efforts and increase the abundance

of naturally regenerating saplings (Chapter 1). This management approach could strike a balance between deer and forest resources enjoyed by people in the Western Upper Peninsula, and improve habitat for other species such as birds that associate with conifer species and require vertical stand structure provided by seedlings and saplings. The percentage of severely browsed hemlock seedlings rose rapidly with estimated deer densities, suggesting that if the goal is to restore browse-preferred conifer species to the landscape, intensive hunting may be necessary to reduce deer populations below 15 deer / km<sup>2</sup>. Hunting may be more effective at reducing deer densities in the southern portion of the Western Upper Peninsula if permitted during the winter when deer yard together.

## **2.5 Conclusion**

Mesic conifers are important sources of biodiversity in northern hardwood forests, providing food and habitat structure for birds, especially warbler species, and white-tailed deer (Kendeigh 1945; Blouch 1984; Green 1992; Patmos 1995). Intense logging and poor regeneration have reduced the representation of mesic conifers across the Great Lakes Region. The acreage of hemlock-dominated mixed forests and white pine-mixed forests are estimated to have declined over eighty five percent from circa 1800 to 2000 in the Western Upper Peninsula of Michigan (MDNR 2006). Unfortunately, restoration of white pine and hemlock in areas with high deer density seems unlikely.

Browse pressure on seedlings in northern hardwoods stands was affected by deer density, local landscape context (i.e. distance to lowland conifer) and snow depth. The percentage of hemlock seedlings browsed rose rapidly with stand deer density, highlighting the importance of maintaining deer densities below a threshold level if the goal is to restore browse preferred species. The relationship between browse pressure and

estimated deer density provides evidence that the pellet-count method can be used to predict relative browse pressure based off relative estimates of deer density. Variability was observed in the relationships of the pellet count estimation techniques (deer density vs deer gap-use) with browse pressure, distance to lowland conifer and deep snow weeks, indicating that the ability of the pellet count method to estimate deer densities, or relative deer densities, is sensitive to sample method.

Deer herbivory can eliminate browse-preferred species from seedling and sapling layers established by natural regeneration or planting. An understanding of factors that affect deer distributions and browse habits are important for developing methods to restore browse-preferred species to landscapes with high deer densities. When studying the effects of deer on seedling and sapling layers, using fecal pellet counts in conjunction with observations of browse on planted or naturally regenerating seedlings may improve the inferences made.

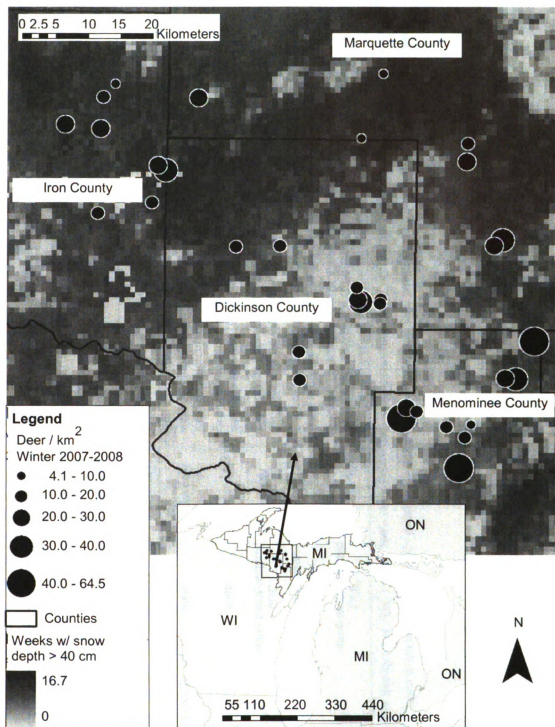


Figure 2.1. Location of stands and estimated winter 2007-2008 deer density overlaid the number of weeks from November 2007 to April 2008 predicted to have snow depth > 40 cm. MI=Michigan, WI=Wisconsin, USA. ON=Ontario, Canada.

Table 2.1. Multilevel logistic regression models used to explore the effects of gap- and stand-level variables on percentage ( $p_{ij}$ ) of white pine or hemlock seedlings browsed in gap  $i$  at stand  $j$  in 2008. The number of seedlings browsed is  $y_{ij}$ , the number of seedlings relocated is  $n_{ij}$ , and the random stand-level intercept is  $\alpha_j$ .

| Model specification                                      | Model    | Gap-level variables ( $X_i$ )   | Stand-level variables ( $Z_j$ ) | Explanation                                                                                                                                                                                          |
|----------------------------------------------------------|----------|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| $y_{ij} \sim \text{Bin}(p_{ij}, n_{ij})$                 | 1 (Null) | none                            | $\gamma_0$ only                 | Null model used as baseline for comparison of model fit. Separate null models were developed with all gap observations and for the subset of observations with gap-DLC measurements.                 |
| $p_{ij} = \text{logit}^{-1}(X_i\beta + \alpha_j)$        | 2        | none                            | Deer and DSW                    | Explores the impact of stand deer density and deep snow weeks on percentage of seedlings browsed (H1)                                                                                                |
| $\alpha_j \sim N(\gamma_0 + Z_j\gamma, \sigma^2 \alpha)$ | 3        | stand-mean centered PGC         | DSW                             | Explores the impact of deer gap-use within a stand and stand deep snow weeks on percentage of seedlings browsed (H1 and 2)                                                                           |
|                                                          | 4        | stand-mean centered PGC and DLC | DSW                             | Explores the impact of deer gap-use and distance to lowland conifer within a stand and stand deep snow weeks on percentage of seedlings browsed (H1 and 2)                                           |
|                                                          | 5        | stand-mean centered DLC         | $\gamma_0$ only                 | Explores the impact of DLC within a stand without consideration of PGC with which stand-centered DLC was correlated (H2). DSW was not included in Model 5 because it was not significant in Model 4. |

Deer = estimated stand deer density (deer / km<sup>2</sup>) winter 2007-2008; DSW=deep snow weeks (number of weeks from November 2007 to April 2008 with snow depth > 40 cm); DLC= distance to lowland conifer; PGC= pellet group count (the number of deer fecal pellets found within a 40 m<sup>2</sup> area in a planted harvest gap).

Table 2.2. Summary of gap- and stand-level variables: Average (Ave), median (Med), standard deviation (Stdev), minimum (Min), maximum (Max) and number of gap or stand-level observations (N obs).

|                                      | Ave   | Med   | Stdev | Min    | Max   | N obs |
|--------------------------------------|-------|-------|-------|--------|-------|-------|
| <b>Gap-level</b>                     |       |       |       |        |       |       |
| DLC (m)                              | 245.2 | 187.3 | 187.5 | 63.24  | 886.0 | 126   |
| Stand-mean centered gap-DLC          | 0.0   | 3.7   | 52.7  | -161.3 | 156.4 | 126   |
| PGC (pellets groups / gap transect)  | 1.5   | 1     | 2.1   | 0      | 16    | 338   |
| Stand-mean centered gap-PGC          | 0.0   | -0.2  | 1.7   | -4.1   | 10.9  | 338   |
| <b>Stand-level</b>                   |       |       |       |        |       |       |
| Deer density (deer/km <sup>2</sup> ) | 22.1  | 17.7  | 14.0  | 4.1    | 64.5  | 34    |
| DSW (weeks)                          | 6.6   | 8.3   | 4.9   | 0      | 12.6  | 34    |

DLC= distance to lowland conifer in meters, PGC= pellet group count (the number of deer fecal pellets found within a 40 m<sup>2</sup> area in a planted harvest gap), DSW=deep snow weeks (number of weeks from November 2007 to April 2008 with snow depth > 40 cm).

Table 2.3. Kendall's tau rank correlation between gap- and stand-level variables. Comparisons between gap-level and stand-level variables use stand-averages for non-centered gap-level variables to comply with independence assumptions. UTM Easting and Northing values were taken from the center of the deer pellet transects.

|              | Northing | Easting | DSW     | Deer density | Gap-PGC |
|--------------|----------|---------|---------|--------------|---------|
| Gap-DLC      | 0.31     | -0.51** | 0.12    | -0.28        | 0.06§   |
| Gap-PGC      | -0.16    | 0.04    | -0.32** | 0.16         |         |
| Deer density | -0.09    | 0.10    | -0.07   |              |         |
| DSW          | 0.56**   | -0.18   |         |              |         |
| Easting      | -0.40**  |         |         |              |         |

\*\*p-value < 0.05, \*p-value < 0.10

§stand-mean centered gap-PGC and stand-mean gap-DLC are significantly positively correlated (Kendall's  $\tau=0.24$ , p-value < 0.001).

Gap-DLC= distance to lowland conifer from gap centers, DSW=deep snow weeks (number of weeks from November 2007 to April 2008 with snow depth > 40 cm), gap-PGC= pellet group count (the number of deer fecal pellets found within a 40 m<sup>2</sup> area in a planted harvest gap).

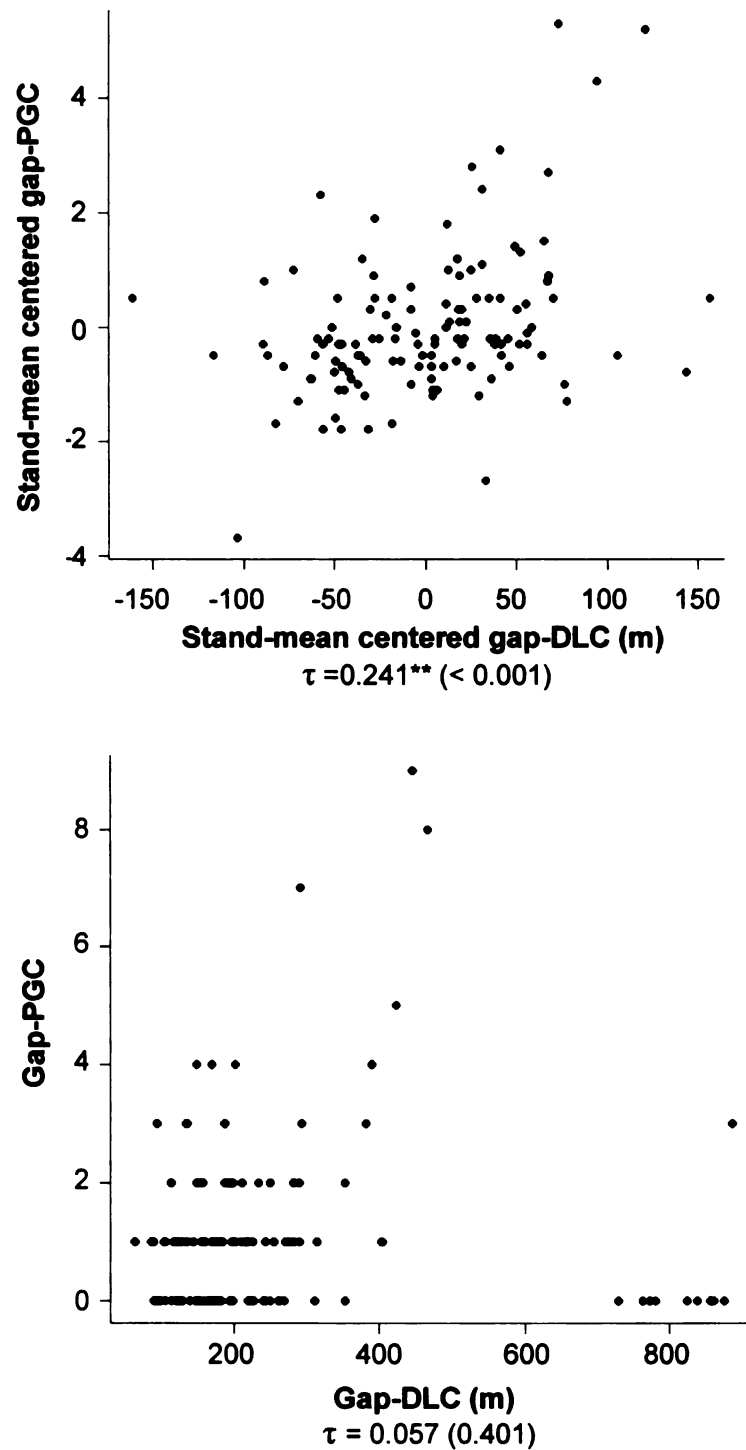


Figure 2.2. Correlation between stand-mean centered gap distance to lowland conifer (DLC) and stand-mean centered gap pellet group counts (PGC). Lower image shows the correlation between the non-centered estimates. Non-parametric Kendall's tau rank correlations ( $\tau$  (p-value)) are presented.

Table 2.4. Average height (stdev), number seedlings found (N.found), percent found (of 2040 seedlings / species planted), browsed and severely browsed (browse category 3 or 4 for hemlock only) for planted seedlings across all gaps and stands in spring 2008.

| Species      | Average height (cm) | N. found | % found | % browsed | % severely browsed |
|--------------|---------------------|----------|---------|-----------|--------------------|
| Hemlock      | 34.3 (7.1)          | 1982     | 97.2    | 92.4      | 60.3               |
| White pine   | 26.7 (7.0)          | 2014     | 98.7    | 29.5      |                    |
| White spruce | 20.8 (4.9)          | 2018     | 98.9    | 1.8       |                    |

Table 2.5. Number of seedlings found (N.found) and percent found, browsed, severely browsed (hemlock only), desiccated and percentage of desiccated seedlings showing evidence of browse for hemlock at the same 11 stands and for pine at the same 19 stands visited in both spring 2008 and 2009. Hemlock seedlings were only resurveyed in 2009 at stands where more than 50% of the seedlings had not been severely browsed in 2008.

|                      | 2008 | 2009 |
|----------------------|------|------|
| <b>Hemlock</b>       |      |      |
| N. found             | 652  | 609  |
| % found              | 98.8 | 92.3 |
| % browsed            | 81.7 | 95.6 |
| % severely browsed   | 28.7 | 75.9 |
| % desiccated         | 0    | 9.2  |
| % desiccated browsed |      | 85.7 |
| <b>White pine</b>    |      |      |
| N. found             | 1126 | 1015 |
| % found              | 98.8 | 89.0 |
| % browsed            | 19.0 | 51.6 |
| % desiccated         | 0    | 20.6 |
| % desiccated browsed |      | 30.2 |

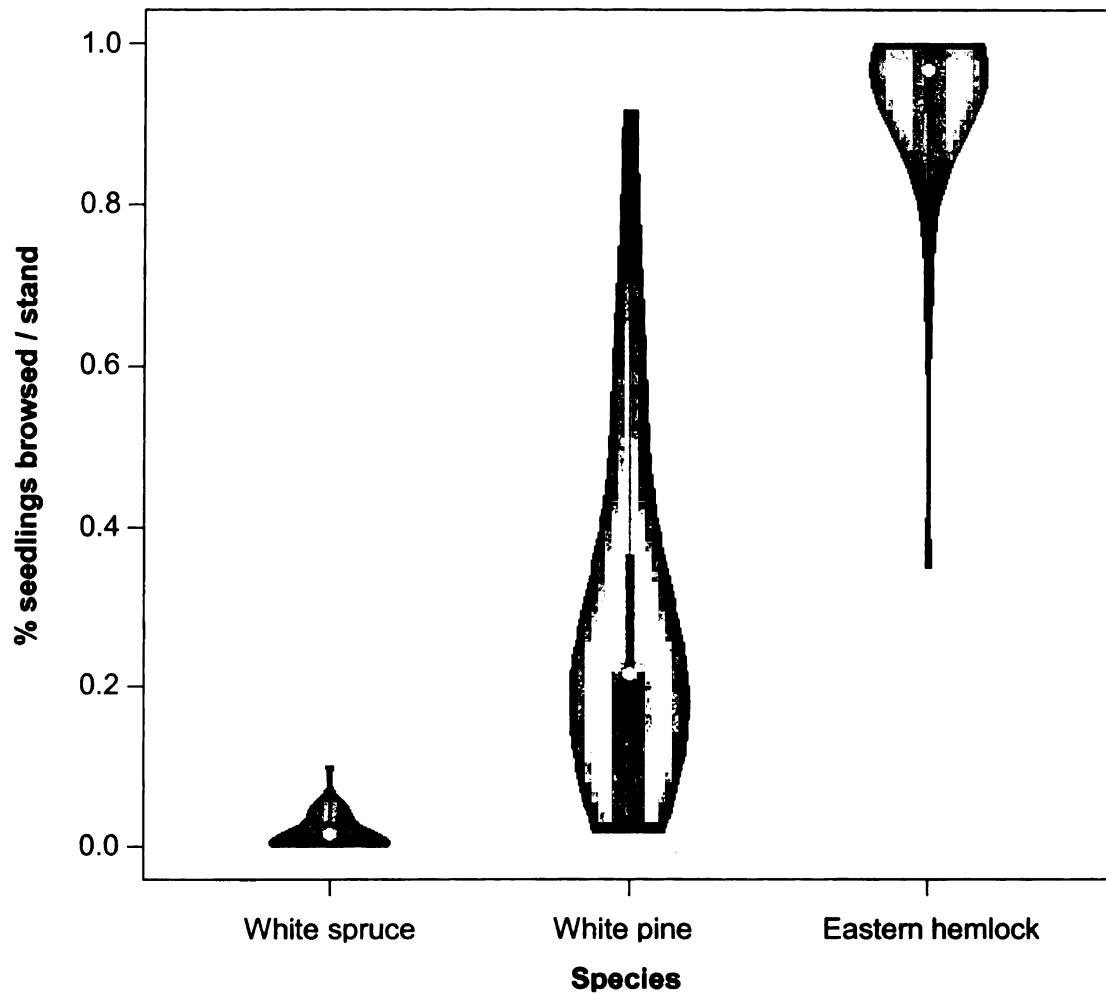


Figure 2.3. Percentage of seedlings browsed by species / stand based on browsed vs not-browsed categorization. Distributions were all significantly different from each other based on Wilcoxon signed-rank test with bonferroni adjusted p-value. Violin plots show distribution of values and median (white dot), interquartile range (thick vertical line) and range of values 1.5 \* IQR (thin vertical line).

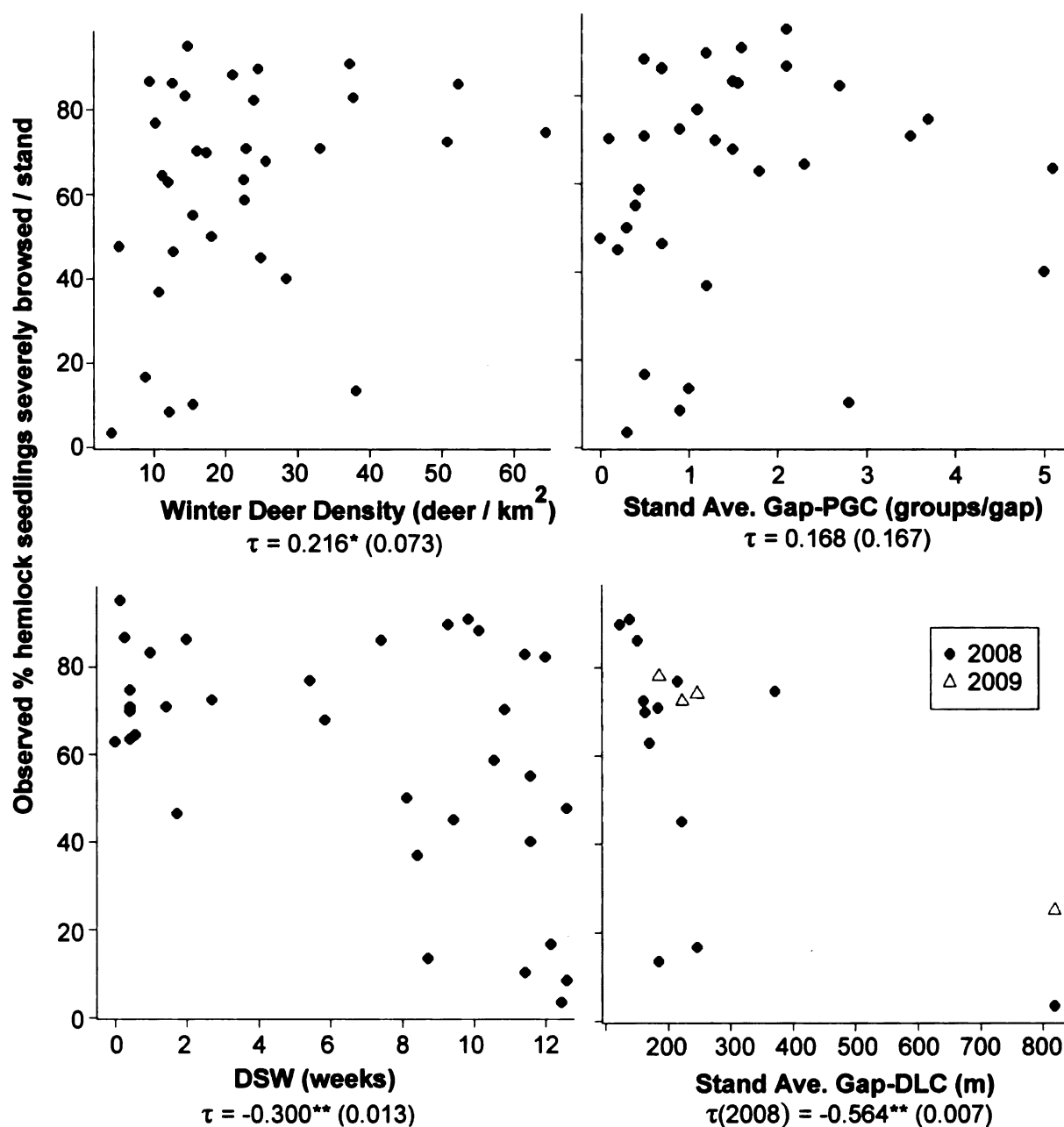


Figure 2.4. Observed percentages of hemlock seedlings severely browsed / stand in 2008 (and 2009 in the distance to lowland conifer (DLC) plot only) versus estimated winter deer density, stand average pellet group count (PGC), deep snow weeks (DSW), and stand average gap-DLC. Non-parametric Kendall's tau rank correlations ( $\tau$  (p-value)) are presented.  $\tau$  was not calculated for 2009 observed percentage browsed versus DLC due to low sample size ( $n=4$ ).  
 $^{**}$ p-value < 0.05,  $^*$  p-value < 0.10

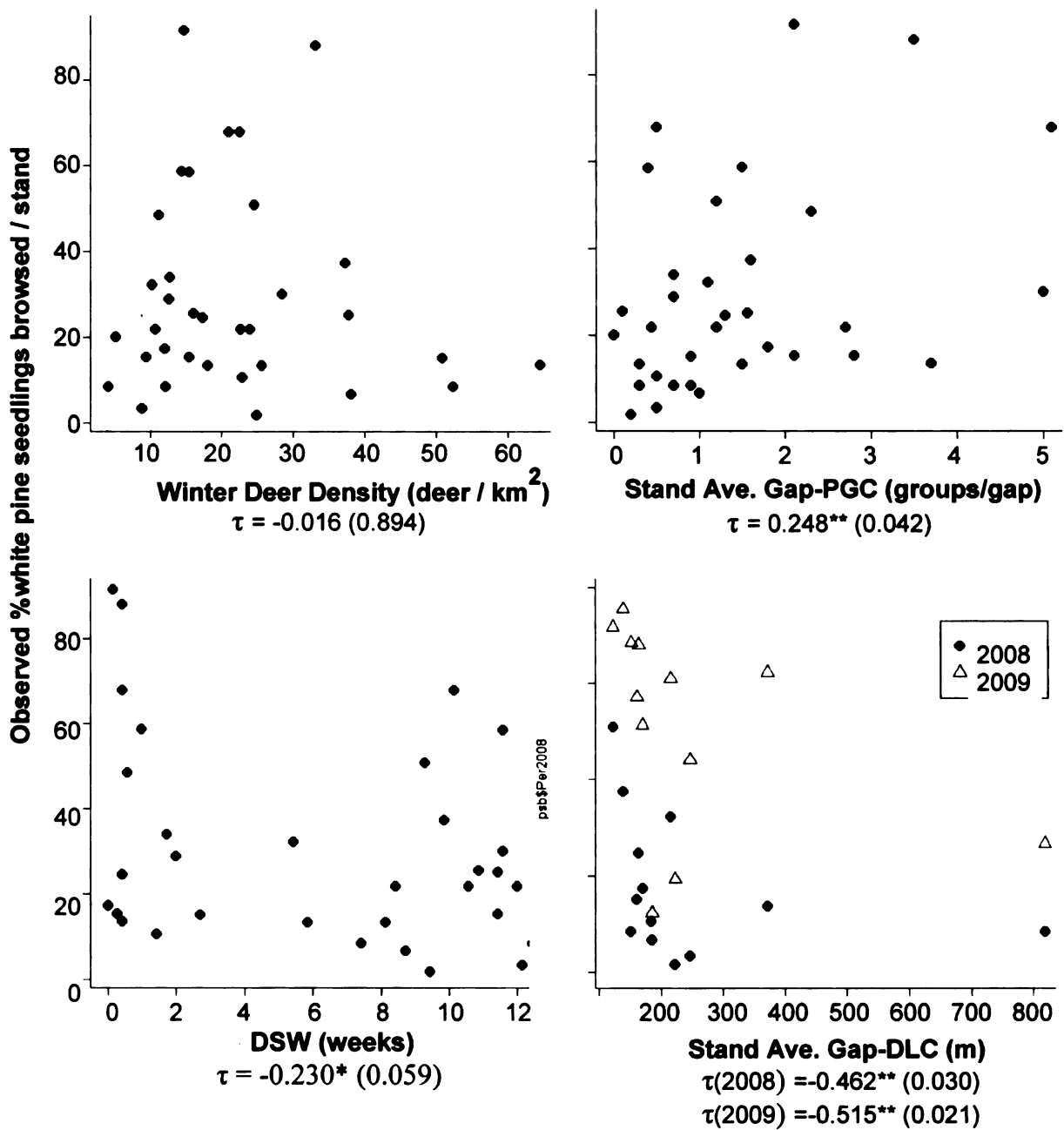


Figure 2.5. Observed percentages of pine seedlings browsed / stand in 2008 (and 2009 in the distance to lowland conifer (DLC) plot only) versus estimated winter deer density, stand average pellet group count (PGC), deep snow weeks (DSW), and stand average gap-DLC. Non-parametric Kendall's tau rank correlations ( $\tau$  (p-value)) are presented.  
 \*\*p-value < 0.05, \* p-value < 0.10

Table 2.6. Multilevel logistic regression models predicting the gap-level percentage of hemlock seedlings severely browsed or a white pine seedling browsed in 2008: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Deer and DSW were grand mean centered and pellets were group (i.e. stand) mean centered. Estimates are on the logistic scale, so a change of one unit in the independent variables corresponds to a change of at most  $\beta/4$  on the probability scale. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.

|                            | Hemlock |               |         | White pine |                |         |
|----------------------------|---------|---------------|---------|------------|----------------|---------|
|                            | Mean    | 95% CI        | DIC     | Mean       | 95% CI         | DIC     |
| <b>Model 1: Null model</b> |         |               | 1159.84 |            |                | 1018.37 |
| Intercept                  | 0.49    | -0.02 – 0.99  |         | -1.09      | -1.58 – -0.62  |         |
| Stand Stdev                | 1.43    | 1.09 – 1.89   |         | 1.35       | 1.02 – 1.79    |         |
| <b>Model 2: DSW + Deer</b> |         |               | 1159.38 |            |                | 1017.76 |
| Intercept                  | 0.49*   | 0.03 – 0.95   |         | -1.10*     | -1.56 – -0.64  |         |
| Deer                       | 0.24    | -0.08 – 0.58  |         | -0.13      | -0.47 – 0.21   |         |
| DSW                        | -0.12*  | -0.22 – -0.03 |         | -0.10*     | -0.20 – -0.01  |         |
| Stand Stdev                | 1.27    | 0.96 – 1.70   |         | 1.30       | 0.97 – 1.74    |         |
| <b>Model 3: DSW + PGC</b>  |         |               | 1133.83 |            |                | 1014.59 |
| Intercept                  | 0.50*   | 0.04 – 0.96   |         | -1.10*     | -1.56 – -0.64  |         |
| Pellets                    | 0.18*   | 0.11 – 0.26   |         | 0.08*      | 0.01 – 0.14    |         |
| DSW                        | -0.14*  | -0.23 – -0.04 |         | -0.10*     | -0.20 – -0.003 |         |
| Stand Stdev                | 1.31    | 0.99 – 1.73   |         | 1.29       | 0.97 – 1.71    |         |
| N gaps                     |         | 338           |         |            | 338            |         |
| N stands                   |         | 34            |         |            | 34             |         |

Deer= estimated winter deer density in 10's of deer / km<sup>2</sup>, DSW=deep snow weeks (number of weeks from November 2007 to April 2008 with snow depth > 40 cm), PGC= pellet group count (the number of deer fecal pellets found within a 40 m<sup>2</sup> area in a planted harvest gap).

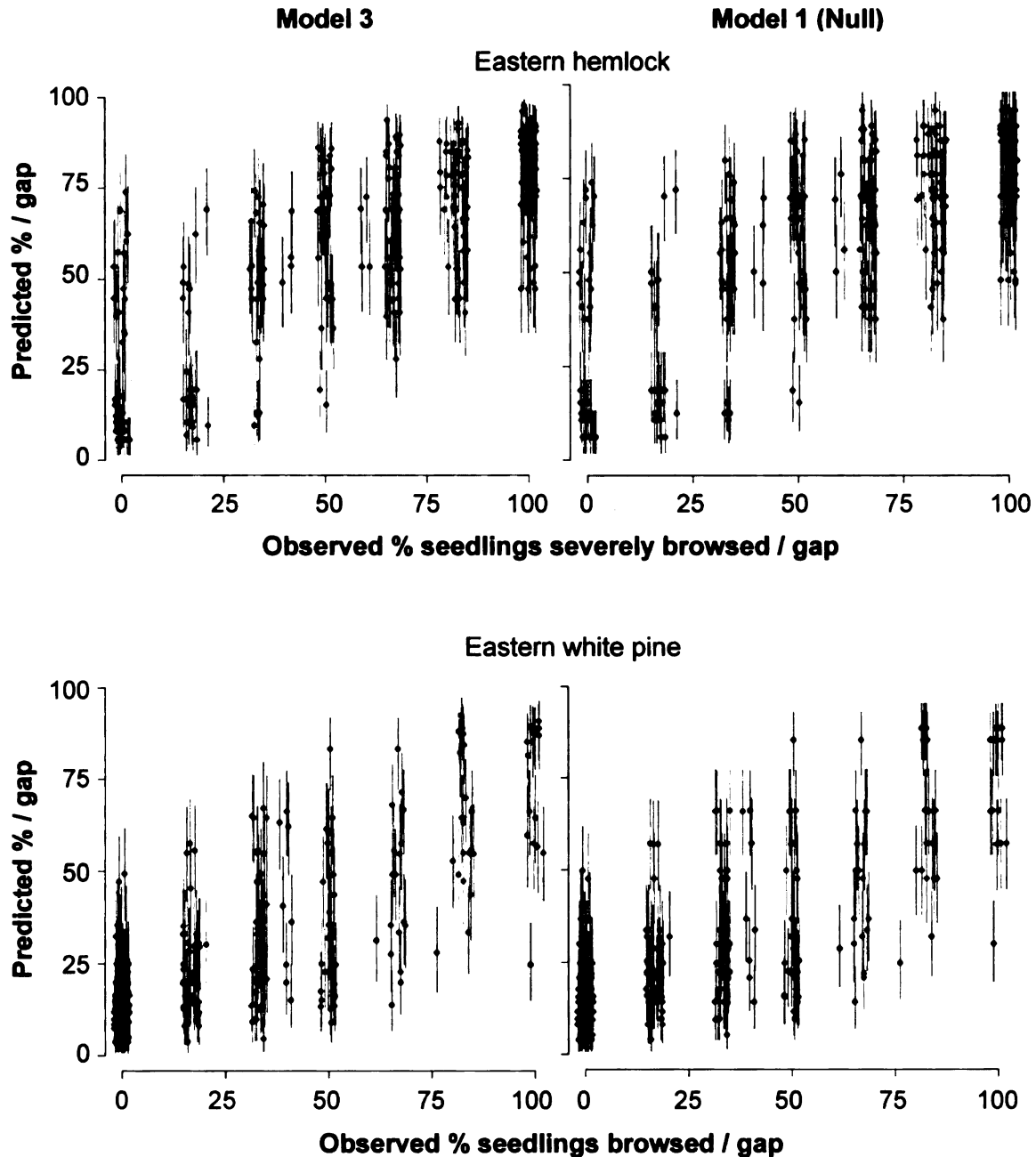


Figure 2.6. Observed percentage of hemlock seedlings severely browsed and white pine seedlings browsed / gap in 2008 versus mean posterior predicted percentages per gap and 95% credible intervals from logistic mixed models. Model 3 includes deep snow weeks and stand-centered gap-level pellet group counts as covariates and model 1 (null model) includes only an overall intercept and stand-level random effect intercept. Observed percentage on the x-axis has been jittered for visualization (random jitter is equivalent for Model 3 and Model 1 plots within species).

Table 2.7. Multilevel logistic regression models predicting the probability that a hemlock seedling was severely browsed or a white pine seedling was browsed in 2008 for thirteen stands where distance to lowland conifer was determined: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distribution. DSW was grand mean centered and pellets and DLC were group (i.e. stand) mean centered. Estimates are on the logistic scale, so a change of one unit in the independent variables corresponds to a change of at most  $\beta/4$  on the probability scale. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.

|                                 | Hemlock |              |        | White pine |               |        |
|---------------------------------|---------|--------------|--------|------------|---------------|--------|
|                                 | Mean    | 95% CI       | DIC    | Mean       | 95% CI        | DIC    |
| <b>Model 1: Null model</b>      |         |              | 397.18 |            |               | 325.29 |
| Intercept                       | 0.37    | -0.71 – 1.42 |        | -1.87      | -2.60 – -1.19 |        |
| Stand Stdev                     | 1.84    | 1.15 – 2.97  |        | 1.16       | 0.69 – 1.95   |        |
| <b>Model 4: DSW + PGC + DLC</b> |         |              | 374.76 |            |               | 326.83 |
| Intercept                       | 0.36    | -0.70 – 1.42 |        | -1.92*     | -2.71 – -1.18 |        |
| DLC                             | 0.02    | -0.02 – 0.05 |        | 0.02       | -0.03 – 0.07  |        |
| Pellets                         | 0.42*   | 0.22 – 0.63  |        | 0.06       | -0.11 – 0.22  |        |
| DSW                             | -0.18   | -0.43 – 0.06 |        | -0.05      | -0.23 – 0.12  |        |
| Stand Stdev                     | 1.81    | 1.11 – 2.99  |        | 1.23       | 0.72 – 2.12   |        |
| <b>Model 5: DLC</b>             |         |              | 392.10 |            |               | 325.32 |
| Intercept                       | 0.37    | -0.73 – 1.47 |        | -1.88*     | -2.63 – -1.18 |        |
| DLC                             | 0.05*   | 0.01 – 0.08  |        | 0.03       | -0.01 – 0.07  |        |
| Stand Stdev                     | 1.87    | 1.16 – 3.04  |        | 1.17       | 0.69 – 1.96   |        |
| N gaps                          |         | 126          |        |            | 126           |        |
| N stands                        |         | 13           |        |            | 13            |        |

DSW=deep snow weeks (number of weeks from November 2007 to April 2008 with snow depth > 40 cm), PGC= pellet group count (the number of deer fecal pellets found within a 40 m<sup>2</sup> area in a planted harvest gap), DLC= distance to lowland conifer in 10s of m.

**Table 2.8.** Mean predicted probability (Pr.) (95% prediction quantiles) of severe browse for hemlock seedlings and probability of browse for white pine seedlings under different gap pellet count (stand centered) and deep snow week conditions. Predictions are for an unmeasured stand based on one-to-one simulations using the posterior distribution for Model 3 parameters.

| Gap pellet count (stand centered) | Deep snow weeks      | Pr. of severe browse<br>hemlock | Pr. of browse<br>white pine |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------|---------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| At stand mean                     | 6.6 weeks (ave obs)  | 59% (10-96%)                    | 30% (2-81%)                 |
| At stand mean                     | 7.6 weeks (+1 week)  | 57% (9-95%)                     | 29% (2-80%)                 |
| At stand mean                     | 12.6 weeks (max obs) | 44% (4-92%)                     | 22% (1-72%)                 |
| +1 from stand mean                | 6.6 weeks (ave obs)  | 63% (12-97%)                    | 31% (3-83%)                 |
| +11 from stand mean (max obs)     | 6.6 weeks (ave obs)  | 87% (44-99%)                    | 45% (5-92%)                 |

## **APPENDICES**

## APPENDIX A: Descriptions of Study Stands

Table A.1. Description of 59 study stands including average snow depth November 2007 – April 2008 (cm), county, ownership, Habitat Type, relative densities (RD) of the three most abundant overstory tree species and average stand diameter at breast height (DBH) of mature trees with dbh >20 cm, and year of harvest entry (YOE).

| Stand ID | Snow Depth <sup>a</sup> | County <sup>b</sup> | Owership <sup>c</sup> | Habitat Type | RD <sup>d,e</sup>       | DBH (Stdev) <sup>d</sup> | YOE  |
|----------|-------------------------|---------------------|-----------------------|--------------|-------------------------|--------------------------|------|
| 4        | 16.3                    | MN                  | PCTC                  | ATD-Hp       | SM 93%<br>BA 4% HM 2%   | 30.4<br>(6.4)            | 2005 |
| 20       | 18.7                    | DI                  | S. MI                 | ATD-Hp       | SM 92%<br>BA 5% AR 2%   | 27.8<br>(5.2)            | 2004 |
| 27       | 33.9                    | MA                  | S. MI                 | ATD          | SM 99%<br>BC 1% IW <1%  | 35.3<br>(10.2)           | 2006 |
| 34       | 31.1                    | IR                  | KLA                   | ATD-Hp       | SM 85%<br>BA 14% AR 1%  | 30.7<br>(6.9)            | 2002 |
| 38       | 31.5                    | IR                  | GMO                   | ATM          | SM 96%<br>YB 2% IW 2%   | 29.6<br>(6.4)            | 2006 |
| 803      | 23.3                    | MN                  | S. MI                 | ATD-Hp       | SM 97%<br>BP 2% YB 1%   | 28.5<br>(5.2)            | 2000 |
| 806      | 20.4                    | DI                  | GMO                   | AOCa         | SM 97%<br>BA 3% IW <1%  | 28.9<br>(5.2)            | 1999 |
| 807      | 22.6                    | MN                  | GMO                   | ATD-Hp       | SM 67%<br>BA 33% IW <1% | 29.6<br>(6.2)            | 2001 |
| 808      | 22.2                    | MN                  | GMO                   | ATD-Hp       | BA 54%<br>SM 22% WA 20% | 28.6<br>(5.9)            | 2000 |
| 814      | 19.2                    | DI                  | S. MI                 | AOCa         | SM 79%<br>BA 20% YB 1%  | 31.9<br>(7.6)            | 1999 |
| 815      | 33.5                    | DI                  | S. MI                 | ATM          | SM 81%<br>PB 10% BA 4%  | 30.5<br>(8.1)            | 1995 |
| 816      | 22.8                    | DI                  | S. MI                 | AOCa         | SM 45%<br>BA 37% WA 14% | 29.8<br>(7.1)            | 2001 |
| 817      | 21.3                    | DI                  | GMO                   | AOCa         | SM 83%<br>BA 13% YB 4%  | 30.8<br>(7.2)            | 2001 |
| 818      | 23.1                    | MA                  | PCTC                  | AOCa         | SM 94%<br>BA 6% IW <1%  | 34.0<br>(7.0)            | 2002 |
| 819      | 21.2                    | MA                  | PCTC                  | AOCa         | SM 100%                 | 29.9<br>(5.7)            | 1999 |
| 820      | 48.0                    | MA                  | GMO                   | ATD          | SM 86%<br>YB 9% AR 4%   | 27.9<br>(5.8)            | 2001 |
| 821      | 40.5                    | MA                  | GMO                   | ATM          | SM 85%<br>YB 7% QA 4%   | 29.5<br>(8.6)            | 2002 |
| 822      | 43.9                    | MA                  | GMO                   | ATM          | SM 59%<br>BF 12% WS 10% | 27.1<br>(5.6)            | 2002 |
| 823      | 40.8                    | MA                  | GMO                   | ATM          | SM 79%<br>BF 14% AR 6%  | 29.9<br>(8.7)            | 2003 |
| 824      | 31.1                    | MA                  | GMO                   | TMC          | SM 78%<br>YB 13% AR 4%  | 32.7<br>(9.4)            | 1999 |
| 825      | 22.6                    | MA                  | PCTC                  | ATD          | SM 92%<br>YB 5% RO 3%   | 29.3<br>(7.0)            | 2003 |

Table A.1. continued

| Stand ID | Snow Depth | County | Owership | Habitat Type | RD                      | DBH (Stdev)    | YOE  |
|----------|------------|--------|----------|--------------|-------------------------|----------------|------|
| 826      | 22.6       | MA     | PCTC     | ATM          | SM 97%<br>AR 3%         | 26.5<br>(5.4)  | 1999 |
| 829      | 24.5       | MA     | PCTC     | ATD          | SM 85%<br>BC 6% AR 6%   | 32.5<br>(6.2)  | 1998 |
| 832      | 22.4       | MA     | PCTC     | ATM          | SM 84%<br>BA 9% AR 4%   | 30.8<br>(5.9)  | 2003 |
| 834      | 37.0       | MA     | S. MI    | ATD          | SM 81%<br>AR 18% IW 1%  | 30.7<br>(9.1)  | 1993 |
| 837      | 35.2       | IR     | S. MI    | AOCa         | SM 69%<br>AR 17% AE 8%  | 29.5<br>(7.8)  | 1998 |
| 842      | 28.8       | MA     | S. MI    | ATD          | SM 78%<br>AR 20% HM 1%  | 33.4<br>(11.1) | 1997 |
| 844      | 25.7       | MA     | PCTC     | ATD          | SM 92%<br>AR 4% BC 4%   | 28.3<br>(5.9)  | 2001 |
| 847      | 32.2       | MA     | S. MI    | ATD          | SM 79%<br>BC 8% BA 8%   | 33.6<br>(11.8) | 2002 |
| 851      | 24.6       | DI     | S. MI    | ATD          | BA 65%<br>SM 24% QA 9%  | 32.1<br>(7.0)  | 2000 |
| 852      | 22.6       | DI     | KLA      | ATD-Hp       | SM 78%<br>BA 19% IW 3%  | 30.3<br>(8.0)  | 2001 |
| 1042     | 31.9       | IR     | S. MI    | TMC          | SM 36%<br>AR 36% HM 22% | 30.9<br>(9.0)  | 1996 |
| 1043     | 31.9       | IR     | S. MI    | AOCa         | SM 94%<br>AR 3% NC 2%   | 30.9<br>(6.6)  | 1998 |
| 1044     | 30.4       | IR     | S. MI    | AOCa         | SM 95%<br>BA 5% IW <1%  | 31.8<br>(8.8)  | 1995 |
| 1081     | 24.5       | IR     | S. MI    | ATM          | SM 77%<br>AR 18% BA 5%  | 29.6<br>(8.0)  | 1996 |
| 1133     | 22.2       | DI     | KLA      | AOCa         | SM 78%<br>BA 12% YB 8%  | 28.8<br>(6.4)  | 1999 |
| 1272     | 17.5       | DI     | GMO      | ATD-Hp       | SM 59%<br>BA 33% WA 8%  | 32.6<br>(8.2)  | 1998 |
| 1603     | 37.2       | IR     | S. MI    | AOCa         | SM 43%<br>AR 29% BC 18% | 33.6<br>(10.9) | 2002 |
| 4024     | 19.4       | MN     | PCTC     | ATD-Hp       | SM 79%<br>HM 11% BA 9%  | 35.5<br>(10.3) | 2000 |
| 4042     | 20.3       | MN     | PCTC     | AOCa         | SM 84%<br>BA 11% NC 4%  | 34.6<br>(10.6) | 1999 |
| 4052     | 20.5       | MN     | PCTC     | ATD-Hp       | BA 43%<br>SM 40% WA 9%  | 30.3<br>(9.0)  | 2002 |
| 4082     | 20.6       | DI     | S. MI    | AOCa         | BA 52%<br>SM 47% BL 1%  | 31.6<br>(6.1)  | 2001 |
| 4102     | 20.5       | DI     | GMO      | AOCa         | SM 97%<br>BA 2% WA 1%   | 27.5<br>(6.3)  | 1996 |
| 4162     | 23.8       | DI     | S. MI    | AOCa         | SM 98%<br>BA 2% IW <1%  | 33.5<br>(6.8)  | 1998 |
| 4172     | 16.9       | DI     | S. MI    | ATD-Hp       | SM 96%<br>BA 4% IW <1%  | 32.4<br>(7.8)  | 1994 |
| 4232     | 29.5       | MA     | S. MI    | ATM          | SM 69%<br>AR 18% QA 7%  | 30.4<br>(8.8)  | 1995 |

Table A.1. continued

| Stand ID | Snow Depth | County | Owenship       | Habitat Type | RD                     | DBH (Stdev)   | YOE  |
|----------|------------|--------|----------------|--------------|------------------------|---------------|------|
| 4324     | 35.1       | MA     | S. MI          | ATD          | SM 91%<br>RO 6% BA 3%  | 29.0<br>(6.2) | 2002 |
| 4332     | 36.2       | MA     | S. MI          | ATM          | SM 94%<br>BC 4% YB 2%  | 33.8<br>(8.8) | 1998 |
| 4342     | 29.4       | MA     | S. MI          | ATD          | SM 98%<br>AR 1% YB 1%  | 32.3<br>(6.6) | 1998 |
| 4422     | 22.9       | MN     | PCTC           | ATD-Hp       | SM 84%<br>HM 8% AB 6%  | 27.8<br>(7.0) | 2000 |
| 4423     | 22.8       | MN     | PCTC           | ATD-Hp       | SM 95%<br>WA 4% HM <1% | 29.9<br>(6.0) | 1997 |
| 4429     | 22.9       | MN     | PCTC           | AOCa         | SM 84%<br>HM 5% AB 4%  | 29.1<br>(8.1) | 1999 |
| 4524     | 22.0       | DI     | KLA            | ATD-Hp       | SM 83%<br>BA 15% AR 1% | 30.9<br>(6.8) | 1998 |
| 5032     | 15.6       | DI     | S. MI          | ATD-Hp       | SM 88%<br>BA 11% IW 1% | 34.6<br>(7.5) | 1997 |
| 5052     | 16.9       | DI     | S. MI          | AOCa         | SM 94%<br>BA 6% IW <1% | 32.1<br>(7.3) | 1995 |
| 5104     | 30.3       | MA     | S. MI          | ATD          | SM 97%<br>AR 3% IW <1% | 31.1<br>(6.7) | 1998 |
| 5292     | 34.6       | IR     | S. MI          | AOCa         | SM 95%<br>AR 4% BA 1%  | 29.1<br>(6.4) | 1997 |
| 5314     | 28.4       | IR     | S. MI          | AOCa         | SM 80%<br>BA 19% YB 1% | 28.0<br>(5.3) | 1995 |
| 5342     | 22.3       | DI     | Private owners | ATM          | SM 63%<br>BA 36% QA 1% | 28.5<br>(5.6) | 2001 |

<sup>a</sup> Snow Data Assimilation System (SNODAS) from the National Snow and Ice Data Center (NSIDC)

<sup>b</sup> DI=Dickinson, IR=Iron, MA=Marquette, MN=Menominee

<sup>c</sup> GMO = GMO Renewable Resources (managed by American Forest Management, Inc); KLA= Keweenaw Land Association, Ltd.; PCTC= Plum Creek Timber Co., Inc.; S. MI = State of Michigan

<sup>d</sup> Calculated for all trees with dbh >20 cm within 20 m from 2-5 non-overlapping gaps at each staqbd randomly selected from the list of all possible combinations with the most non-overlapping gaps.

<sup>e</sup> **AB**= American beech (*Fagus grandifolia* Ehrh.), **AE**= American elm (*Ulmus americana* L.), **AR**= red maple (*Acer rubrum* L.), **BA**= American basswood (*Tilia americana* L.), **BC**= black cherry (*Prunus serotina* Ehrh.), **BF**= balsam fir (*Abies balsamea* (L.) Mill.), **BL**= black ash (*Fraxinus nigra* Marsh.), **BP**= balsam poplar (*Populus balsamifera* L.), **HM**= eastern hemlock (*Tsuga Canadensis* (L.) Carrière), **IW**= ironwood (*Ostrya virginiana* (Mill.) K. Koch), **NC**= northern white-cedar (*Thuja occidentalis* L.), **PB**= paper birch (*Betula papyrifera* Marshall), **SM**= sugar maple (*Acer saccharum* Marsh.), **QA**= quaking aspen (*Populus tremuloides* Michx.), **RO**= northern red oak (*Quercus rubra* L.), **WA**= white ash (*Fraxinus americana* L.), **WS**= white spruce (*Picea glauca* (Moench) Voss), **YB**= yellow birch (*Betula alleghaniensis* Britton)

Table A.2. Geological characteristics for each stand, including landform type, soil type, upper layer soil texture and sugar maple site index at age 50 (SI<sub>50</sub>) in meters estimated for each soil type and soil series.

| Stand ID | Landform <sup>a</sup>             | Soil type <sup>b</sup>                                                 | Soil texture <sup>b,c</sup> | SI <sub>50</sub> <sup>b</sup> | Soil series <sup>b</sup>                      |
|----------|-----------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------|
| 4        | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 3-9% slopes                                    | fsal                        | 19.8                          | Onaway                                        |
| 20       | Ground moraine                    | Emmet fine sandy loam, 6-18% slope                                     | fsal                        | 20.1                          | Emmet                                         |
| 27       | Disintegration moraine            | Karlin sandy loam, 1-6 % slopes                                        | sal                         | NA                            | Keewaydin-Michigamme-Rock Outcrop Association |
| 34       | Ground moraine                    | Trenary fine sandy-loam, 6-18% slopes, stony                           | fsal                        | 18.6                          | Trenary                                       |
| 38       | Disintegration moraine            | Sundog very fine sandy loam, 6-18% slopes                              | vfsal                       | NA                            | Sundog                                        |
| 803      | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 3-9% slopes                                    | fsal                        | 19.8                          | Onaway                                        |
| 806      | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Emmet fine sandy loam, 0-6% slope                                      | fsal                        | 20.1                          | Emmet                                         |
| 807      | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Onaway fine sandy loam, 3-9% slopes                                    | fsal                        | 19.8                          | Onaway                                        |
| 808      | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 3-9% slopes                                    | fsal                        | 19.8                          | Onaway                                        |
| 814      | Ground moraine                    | Emmet fine sandy loam, 6-18% slope                                     | fsal                        | 20.1                          | Emmet                                         |
| 815      | Disintegration moraine            | Pemene fine sandy loam, 6-18% slope                                    | fsal                        | 18.3                          | Pemene                                        |
| 816      | Ground moraine                    | Emmet-Pemene fine sandy loams, 0-6% slope                              | fsal                        | 20.1 / 18.3                   | Emmet-Pemene                                  |
| 817      | Ground moraine                    | Emmet fine sandy loam, 6-18% slope                                     | fsal                        | 20.1                          | Emmet                                         |
| 818      | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 6-18% slopes                                   | fsal                        | 19.8                          | Cunard-Nahma Association                      |
| 819      | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Emmet fine sandy loam, 6-18% slopes                                    | fsal                        | 20.1                          | Kalkaska-Ishpeming-Rock Outcrop Association   |
| 820      | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Keewaydin-Dishno complex, 6-18% slopes, rocky, bouldery                | cfsal / csl                 | 18.6 / 18.3                   | Sundog-Minocqua-Channing Association          |
| 821      | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Keewaydin-Dishno complex, 6-18% slopes, rocky, bouldery                | cfsal / csl                 | 18.6 / 18.3                   | Sundog-Minocqua-Channing Association          |
| 822      | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Keewaydin-Michigamme-Rock outcrop complex, 6-25% slopes, very bouldery | cfsal                       | 18.6 / 18.3                   | Kalkaska-Carbondale-Deford Association        |
| 823      | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Keewaydin-Michigamme-Rock outcrop complex, 6-25% slopes, very bouldery | cfsal                       | 18.6 / 18.3                   | Kalkaska-Carbondale-Deford Association        |

Table A.2. continued.

| Stand ID | Landform                          | Soil type                                                           | Soil texture      | SI50               | Soil series                                 |
|----------|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------|--------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| 824      | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Keewaydin-Dishno complex, 6-18% slopes, rocky, bouldery             | cfsal / csl       | 18.6 / 18.3        | Sundog-Minocqua-Channing Association        |
| 825      | Dissected moraine                 | Garlic-Alcona-Voelker complex, 15-70% slopes                        | fsa / lvfsa / fsa | 18.9 / 18.6 / 18.6 | Kalkaska-Ishpeming-Rock Outcrop Association |
| 826      | Dissected moraine                 | Garlic-Alcona-Voelker complex, 15-70% slopes                        | fsa / lvfsa / fsa | 18.9 / 18.6 / 18.6 | Kalkaska-Ishpeming-Rock Outcrop Association |
| 829      | Dissected moraine                 | Garlic-Alcona-Voelker complex, 8-35% slopes                         | fsa / lvfsa / fsa | 18.9 / 18.6 / 18.6 | Kalkaska-Ishpeming-Rock Outcrop Association |
| 832      | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 6-18% slopes                                | fsal              | 19.8               | Cunard-Nahma Association                    |
| 834      | Disintegration moraine            | Amasa very fine sandy loam, 1-6% slopes                             | vfsal             | 18.6               | Cunard-Nahma Association                    |
| 837      | Ground moraine                    | Petticoat-Wabeno silt loams, 6-8% slopes, very stony                | sl                | 20.1 / 20.4        | Petticoat-Wabeno                            |
| 842      | Till-floored lake plain           | Munising-Yalmer complex, 6-18% slopes                               | fsal / fsa        | 19.2 / 18.6        | Zeba-Jacobsville Association                |
| 844      | Till-floored lake plain           | Munising-Yalmer complex, 1-6% slopes                                | fsal / fsa        | 19.2 / 18.6        | Zeba-Jacobsville Association                |
| 847      | Ground moraine                    | Shoepac-Trenary silt loams, 1-6% slopes                             | sl                | 19.8 / 18.6        | Shoepac-Carbondale Association              |
| 851      | Ground moraine                    | Emmet-Pemene fine sandy loams, 6-18% slope                          | fsal              | 20.1 / 18.3        | Emmet-Pemene                                |
| 852      | Ground moraine                    | Emmet fine sandy loam, 6-18% slope                                  | fsal              | 20.1               | Emmet                                       |
| 1042     | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Wabeno silt loam, 1-6% slopes, very stony                           | sl                | 20.4               | Wabeno                                      |
| 1043     | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Wabeno silt loam, 1-6% slopes, very stony                           | sl                | 20.4               | Wabeno                                      |
| 1044     | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Wabeno silt loam, 1-6% slopes, very stony                           | sl                | 20.4               | Wabeno                                      |
| 1081     | Disintegration moraine            | Goodman-Wabeno-Sundog sandy substratum complex, 6-18% slopes, stony | sl / sl / vfsal   | 21.0 / 20.4 / NA   | Goodman-Wabeno-Sundog                       |
| 1133     | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Emmet fine sandy loam, 6-18% slope                                  | fsal              | 20.1               | Emmet                                       |
| 1272     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Emmet fine sandy loam, 0-6% slope                                   | fsal              | 20.1               | Emmet                                       |
| 1603     | Ground moraine                    | Petticoat-Wabeno silt loams, 1-6% slopes, very stony                | sl                | 20.1 / 20.4        | Petticoat-Wabeno                            |
| 4024     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 3-9% slopes                                 | fsal              | 19.8               | Onaway                                      |
| 4042     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 3-9% slopes                                 | fsal              | 19.8               | Onaway                                      |

Table A.2. continued.

| Stand ID | Landform                          | Soil type                                            | Soil texture | SI <sub>50</sub> | Soil series                                 |
|----------|-----------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------|--------------|------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| 4052     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 12-35% slopes                | fsal         | 19.8             | Onaway                                      |
| 4082     | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Emmet-Rock outcrop complex, 6-18% slope              | fsal         | 20.1             | Emmet                                       |
| 4102     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Emmet fine sandy loam, 0-6% slope                    | fsal         | 20.1             | Emmet                                       |
| 4162     | Ground moraine                    | Emmet fine sandy loam, 0-6% slope                    | fsal         | 20.1             | Emmet                                       |
| 4172     | Ground moraine                    | Emmet fine sandy loam, 0-6% slope                    | fsal         | 20.1             | Emmet                                       |
| 4232     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Emmet-Escanaba complex, 1-6% slopes                  | fsal / lfsa  | 20.1 / 18.3      | Rubicon-Sayner Association                  |
| 4324     | Disintegration moraine            | Keweenaw-Kalkaska complex, 6-18% slopes              | lsa / sa     | 18.6 / 19.5      | Rubicon-Sayner Association                  |
| 4332     | Disintegration moraine            | Keweenaw-Kalkaska complex, 6-18% slopes              | lsa / sa     | 18.6 / 19.5      | Rubicon-Sayner Association                  |
| 4342     | Disintegration moraine            | Keweenaw loamy sand, 6-18% slopes                    | lsa          | 18.6             | Zeba-Jacobsville Association                |
| 4422     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 3-9% slopes                  | fsal         | 19.8             | Onaway                                      |
| 4423     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 3-9% slopes                  | fsal         | 19.8             | Onaway                                      |
| 4429     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Onaway fine sandy loam, 3-9% slopes                  | fsal         | 19.8             | Onaway                                      |
| 4524     | Ground moraine                    | Longrie fine sandy loam, 0-6% slope                  | fsal         | 18.6             | Longrie                                     |
| 5032     | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Emmet fine sandy loam, 6-18% slope                   | fsal         | 20.1             | Emmet                                       |
| 5052     | Ground moraine                    | Emmet fine sandy loam, 0-6% slope                    | fsal         | 20.1             | Emmet                                       |
| 5104     | Disintegration moraine            | Emmet fine sandy loam, 6-18% slopes                  | fsal         | 20.1             | Kalkaska-Ishpeming-Rock Outcrop Association |
| 5292     | Bedrock-controlled ground moraine | Petticoat-Wabeno silt loams, 6-8% slopes, very stony | sl           | 20.1 / 20.4      | Petticoat-Wabeno                            |
| 5314     | Disintegration moraine            | Stambaugh silt loam, 2-6% slopes, stony              | sl           | 18.6             | Stambaugh                                   |
| 5342     | Drumlinized ground moraine        | Emmet fine sandy loam, 0-6% slope                    | fsal         | 20.1             | Emmet                                       |

<sup>a</sup> Jerome, Dwight S. and Upper Peninsula, Michigan Soil Survey Staff. 2006 draft. Landforms of the Upper Peninsula of Michigan. USDA NRCS.

<sup>b</sup> Linsemier, Lyle H. 1997. Soil survey of Iron County, Michigan. USDA NRCS and USFS. Washington, D.C.; Schwenner, Chales. 1989. Soil survey of Menominee County, Michigan. USDA NRCS. Washington, D.C.; Schwenner, Chales. 2007. Soil survey of Marquette County, Michigan. USDA NRCS. Washington, D.C.; USDA. 1989. Soil survey of Dickinson County, Michigan. USDA NRCS. Washintgon, D.C.

<sup>c</sup> Abbreviations: cfsal= cobbly fine sandy loam; csl= cobbly silt loam; fsa= fine sand; lfsa= loamy fine sand; fsal= fine sandy loam; lsa= loamy sand; lvfsa= loamy very fine sand; sa= sand; sal= sandy loam; sl= silt loam; vfsal= very fine sandy loam

## APPENDIX B: Additional Details on Methodology

### B.1. Pellet count layout and conversion of pellet counts to deer density

Pellet groups were double counted within ten 50 m by 4 m transects oriented in an hour glass shape (LeBouton et al 2005) (Figure B.1).

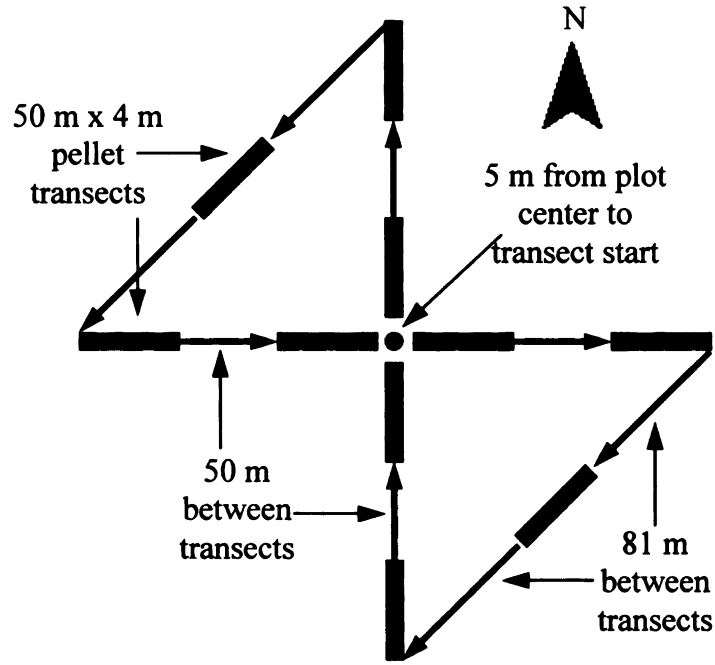


Figure B.1. Layout of pellet count transects.

Average pellet group counts from all ten transects were used to calculate deer density (equation 1). The pellet deposition rate estimated for the Upper Peninsula is 13.4 times per deer in a 24-h period (Hill 2001) and the period of deposition was the number of days from November 1 (assumed date of leaf-off) to the date of the pellet surveys in April and May (180 to 200 days). A constant was required to convert to deer / km<sup>2</sup>.

$$\text{Estimated deer density / km}^2 = \frac{\text{average pellet group count} \times 5000}{\text{period of deposition} \times 13.4} \quad (1)$$

## B.2. Predicting diameter at breast height from stump basal diameter and measurement height

Stump basal diameter was converted to diameter at breast height using the equation below developed by Demaerschalk and Omule 1978 for merchantable tree species in British Columbia:

$$DBH = StDiam + b \times StDiam \times \ln \frac{StHt + 1}{2.3}$$

StDiam is the stump diameter outside bark in centimeters, StHt is the ht of the diameter measurement in meters and b is a species specific constant. Values for the constant “b” from the southern central forest inventory zones in British Columbia were instead of the higher latitude or coastal regions because this region is more similar to the Western Upper Peninsula in terms of climatic conditions. Constant values were available for balsam fir, quaking aspen, birch species and spruce species. Values for western hemlock (*Tsuga heterophylla*) were used for eastern hemlock (*Tsuga canadensis*), western red-cedar (*Thuja plicata*) for northern white-cedar (*Thuja occidentalis*), and bigleaf maple (*Acer macrophyllum*) for sugar maple and all other hardwood species (Table B.1).

Table B.1. Species-specific parameter values for “b” in equation estimating dbh from stump diameter (equation 2) and standard error of estimated dbh (Demaerschalk and Omule 1978). “Species” refers to the species from this study and “Equivalent species” refers to the species from Demaerschalk and Omule 1978.

| Species              | Equivalent species | b        | Standard error (cm) |
|----------------------|--------------------|----------|---------------------|
| Balsam fir           |                    | 0.301495 | 2.26                |
| Birch species        |                    | 0.297892 | 2.07                |
| Spruce species       |                    | 0.415792 | 3.65                |
| Quaking aspen        |                    | 0.281240 | 1.68                |
| Northern white-cedar | Western red-cedar  | 0.486935 | 4.53                |
| Eastern hemlock      | Western hemlock    | 0.264130 | 3.02                |
| Other hardwoods      | Bigleaf maple      | 0.285892 | 0.91                |

### **B.3. FVS diameter growth simulations to “grow back” diameter of mature seed trees to their diameter at the time of harvest**

I wanted to predict seed production potential at the time of harvest because some saplings present in harvest gaps may have come from seeds produced by trees that were removed by the harvest. USDA Forest Vegetation Simulator Lake States Variant (Bush and Brand 1993) diameter growth equations were implemented in NetLogo (Wilensky 1999) to “grow back” the diameter at breast height (dbh) of living trees to dbh at harvest ( $\text{dbh}_{\text{Harvest}}$ ). Observed stand conditions were simulated and annual diameter growth for each measured tree of a given dbh and species were estimated. For each time step: 1) predicted diameter growth from the current year was subtracted from the diameter, 2) stand basal area and quadratic mean diameter were re-calibrated, and 3) annual diameter growth was recalculated. This process was reiterated for the number of years since harvest.

Species-specific FVS diameter growth equations require Site Index (obtained from soil survey data) and stand basal area (BA) and quadratic mean diameter (QMD) of trees with  $\text{dbh} > 2.54$  cm. However, I only measured trees with  $\text{dbh} \geq 20$  cm. In order to predict the basal area of trees with  $\text{dbh} < 20$  cm ( $\text{BAu}$ ) and the quadratic mean diameter of trees with  $\text{dbh} > 2.54$  cm ( $\text{QMDt}$ ) in Netlogo, linear regression models were developed with covariates that could be produced from my data set (i.e. variables involving trees with  $\text{dbh} > 20$  cm). Models were calibrated with stand BA and dbh data from 55 managed northern hardwood stands in the study area collected using prism point-sampling (Millington et al 2009 *in review*). Twelve of these stands coincide with those sampled for gap regeneration.

Variables included in regression models were BA (BAo), quadratic mean diameter (QMDo), the percentage of trees per hectare not sugar maple (PerNotSM) and the species richness (SR) for trees with dbh > 20 cm. Time since harvest (TSHarvest) was also included, but only known for 23 stands. AIC values were compared in order to determine the model that best predicted BAu and QMDt (i.e. lower AIC values by 2 indicate better model performance). BAu and species richness (SR) were log transformed to comply with normality assumptions. Two stands where no saplings < 20 cm were sampled were removed because they were outliers. The best model for both variables (i.e. lowest AIC of models tested) included BAo and PerNotSM (Tables B.2 and B.3). TSHarvest and SR were not significant predictors.

I decided that incorporating stochasticity into the BAu and QMDt predictions was unnecessary. This was determined based on twenty 15 year simulations for one randomly selected stand for which the average standard deviation of the predicted dbh<sub>Harvest</sub> for all 183 trees at this stand was monitored. For each simulation,  $\beta$ -values for the BAu and QMDt regression models were randomly selected from a uniform distribution bounded by the  $\beta$  point-estimate plus or minus one standard error. The average standard deviation stabilized after 10 simulations at around 0.052-0.059 cm. Diameter estimates in the field were measured to the nearest tenth of a centimeter, so a difference of ~ 1 cm in dbh<sub>Harvest</sub> estimates was insignificant.

Sensitivity analysis were also run to determine the effect of BAu and QMDt on one year diameter growth estimates for trees with the average dbh for sugar maple (30.1 cm), basswood (34.0 cm) and ironwood (24.0 cm). BAo and site index equal were set to the average from the 59 sites (19.5 m<sup>2</sup>/ha and 19.7 m respectively). For baseline diameter

Table B.2. Parameter estimates ( $\beta$ ), standard errors (SE), AIC and adjusted  $R^2$  values from linear regression models to predict log transformed basal area (BAu) of trees with dbh < 20 cm.

| Log(BAu)                                                 |                   |       |           |
|----------------------------------------------------------|-------------------|-------|-----------|
| Model predictors                                         | $\beta$ (SE)      | AIC   | Adj $R^2$ |
| Models using all stand (n=53)                            |                   |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 3.634 (0.291)***  | 100.3 | 0.484     |
| BAo                                                      | -0.017 (0.004)*** |       |           |
| PerNotSM                                                 | 1.360 (0.327)***  |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 4.237 (0.291)***  | 114.0 | 0.319     |
| BAo                                                      | -0.021 (0.004)*** |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 4.053 (0.347)***  | 115.1 | 0.319     |
| BAo                                                      | -0.021 (0.004)*** |       |           |
| Log(SR)                                                  | 0.155 (0.160) NS  |       |           |
| Intercept (null)                                         | 2.851 (0.114)***  | 133.5 |           |
| Models using stands with known time since harvest (n=25) |                   |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 3.511 (0.474)***  | 45.8  | 0.409     |
| BAo                                                      | -0.017 (0.006)*   |       |           |
| PerNotAcesac                                             | 1.229 (0.643) NS  |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 3.686 (0.433)***  | 46.0  | 0.403     |
| BAo                                                      | -0.022 (0.006)**  |       |           |
| TSHarvest                                                | 0.067 (0.036) NS  |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 4.022 (0.415)***  | 47.6  | 0.334     |
| BAo                                                      | -0.022 (0.006)**  |       |           |
| Intercept (null)                                         | 2.655 (0.160)***  | 56.1  |           |
| Intercept                                                | 2.328 (0.312)***  | 56.5  | 0.021     |
| TSHarvest                                                | 0.057 (0.047) NS  |       |           |

\*\*\*p < 0.001 \*\*p < 0.01 \*p < 0.05 NS p > 0.05

BAo= basal area of trees with dbh > 20 cm, PerNotSM= percentage of trees with dbh > 20 not sugar maple, SR= species richness of trees with dbh > 20 cm, TSHarvest=time since harvest.

growth estimates, BAu was set to 2.62 m<sup>2</sup>/ha and QMDt to 22.8 cm (the estimates

predicted from the average BAo and PerNot\_SM (17.8%)). BAu was varied from the

average estimate to the average estimate plus the first quartile residual from the

Table B.3. Parameter estimates ( $\beta$ ), standard errors (SE), AIC and adjusted  $R^2$  values from linear regression models to predict quadratic mean diameter (QMDt) of trees with dbh > 2.54 cm.

| QMDt                                                     |                   |       |           |
|----------------------------------------------------------|-------------------|-------|-----------|
| Model predictors                                         | $\beta$ (SE)      | AIC   | Adj $R^2$ |
| Models using all stand (n=53)                            |                   |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 5.296 (0.948)***  | 225.3 | 0.363     |
| BAo                                                      | 0.050 (0.012)***  |       |           |
| PerNotSM                                                 | -2.908 (1.064)**  |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 4.008 (0.873)***  | 230.7 | 0.282     |
| BAo                                                      | 0.058 (0.013)***  |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 4.753 (1.035)***  | 230.9 | 0.293     |
| BAo                                                      | 0.057 (0.013)***  |       |           |
| Log(SR)                                                  | -0.628 (0.477) NS |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | -0.163 (0.962) NS | 243.9 | 0.080     |
| QMDo                                                     | 0.683 (0.290)*    |       |           |
| Intercept (null)                                         | 7.837 (0.333)***  | 247.3 |           |
| Models using stands with known time since harvest (n=25) |                   |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 6.156 (1.442)***  | 97.0  | 0.383     |
| BAo                                                      | 0.042 (0.019)*    |       |           |
| PerNotSM                                                 | -4.327 (1.959)*   |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 4.357 (1.295)**   | 100.0 | 0.269     |
| BAo                                                      | 0.059 (0.019)**   |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 4.153 (1.459)**   | 101.9 | 0.237     |
| BAo                                                      | 0.058 (0.020)**   |       |           |
| TSHarvest                                                | 0.041 (0.123)     |       |           |
| Intercept (null)                                         | 8.066 (0.477)***  | 106.3 |           |
| Intercept                                                | 3.930 (6.500) NS  | 107.9 | -0.028    |
| QMDo                                                     | 0.342 (0.535) NS  |       |           |
| Intercept                                                | 7.670 (0.958)***  | 108.1 | -0.036    |
| TSHarvest                                                | 0.068 (0.143) NS  |       |           |

\*\*\*p < 0.001, \*\*p < 0.01, \*p < 0.05, NS p > 0.05

BAo= basal area of trees with dbh > 20 cm, PerNotSM= percentage of trees with dbh > 20 not sugar maple, SR= species richness of trees with dbh > 20 cm, QMDo=quadratic mean diameter of trees with dbh > 20 cm, TSHarvest=time since harvest.

predictive equations ( $-1.02 \text{ m}^2/\text{ha}$ ), plus the third quartile residual ( $2.38 \text{ m}^2/\text{ha}$ ) and plus the maximum observed residual ( $9.33 \text{ m}^2/\text{ha}$ ). Subtracting the third quartile residual and maximum residual produced unrealistic negative estimates of BAu. QMDt was varied from the average estimate to the average plus the first quartile residual ( $-2.5 \text{ cm}$ ), and plus or minus the third quartile ( $3.6 \text{ cm}$ ) and maximum residual ( $9.3 \text{ cm}$ ).

The sensitivity index (the percent change in diameter growth divided by the percent change in BAu or QMDt) was on average 0.055 for BAu and 0.279 for QMDt, well under the 1.5 threshold indicating significant sensitivity to a variable (Table B.4). A 356% increase in BAu (adding the maximum residual) only decreased diameter growth by 17.8 - 19.6 % and a 41% increase in QMDt (adding the maximum residual) only decreased diameter growth by 3.8 - 21.1% for the three species. The maximum differences in growth rate was a 0.36 cm decrease in annual sugar maple growth rate with a 41% increase in QMDt and a 0.30 cm decrease in annual basswood growth rate with a 356% increase in BAu (adding the maximum residual). Over fifteen years, this would translate into at most a 5.3 and 4.6 cm bias in  $\text{dbh}_{\text{Harvest}}$ . However, this represents a worst case scenario in which the stand-level BAu and QMDt are most poorly predicted. Fifty percent of the residuals (the interquartile range) lie within a much narrower range for BAu ( $-1.02$  and  $+2.38 \text{ m}^2 / \text{ha}$ ) and QMD ( $-2.45$  and  $+3.55 \text{ cm}$ ), and over- or under-predictions within this range only results in a maximum change of 0.11 cm diameter growth/yr, or a biased  $\text{dbh}_{\text{Harvest}}$  estimation of 1.65 cm over 15 years. This error is acceptable given the error already inherent to FVS growth estimates (Canavan and Ramm 2000; Pokharel and Froese 2008).

Table B.4. Sensitivity analysis: percent change in diameter growth (DG) with given percent change in BAu or QMDt and sensitivity index (absolute percent change in diameter growth divided by absolute percent change in BAu or QMDt).

| Species                                                                                     | % Change DG | % Change BAu  | Sensitivity Index |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------|---------------|-------------------|
| <b>BAu average (2.62 m<sup>2</sup>/ha) + max residual (9.33 m<sup>2</sup>/ha)</b>           |             |               |                   |
| Basswood                                                                                    | -17.77      | 356.13        | 0.050             |
| Sugar maple                                                                                 | -19.64      | 356.13        | 0.055             |
| Ironwood                                                                                    | -18.97      | 356.13        | 0.053             |
| <b>BAu average (2.62 m<sup>2</sup>/ha) + 3rd quartile residual (2.38 m<sup>2</sup>/ha)</b>  |             |               |                   |
| Basswood                                                                                    | -4.62       | 90.65         | 0.051             |
| Sugar maple                                                                                 | -5.24       | 90.65         | 0.058             |
| Ironwood                                                                                    | -5.18       | 90.65         | 0.057             |
| <b>BAu average (2.62 m<sup>2</sup>/ha) + 1st quartile residual (-1.02 m<sup>2</sup>/ha)</b> |             |               |                   |
| Basswood                                                                                    | 2.03        | -39.07        | 0.052             |
| Sugar maple                                                                                 | 2.34        | -39.07        | 0.060             |
| Ironwood                                                                                    | 2.33        | -39.07        | 0.060             |
| Average Sensitivity Index BAu                                                               |             |               | 0.055             |
| Species                                                                                     | % Change DG | % Change QMDt | Sensitivity Index |
| <b>QMDt average (22.8 cm) + max residual (9.3 cm)</b>                                       |             |               |                   |
| Basswood                                                                                    | -21.11      | 40.90         | 0.516             |
| Sugar maple                                                                                 | -3.78       | 40.90         | 0.092             |
| Ironwood                                                                                    | -15.02      | 40.90         | 0.367             |
| <b>QMDt average (22.8 cm) - max residual (9.3 cm)</b>                                       |             |               |                   |
| Basswood                                                                                    | 3.74        | -40.9         | 0.091             |
| Sugar maple                                                                                 | -11.59      | -40.9         | 0.283             |
| Ironwood                                                                                    | 15.85       | -40.9         | 0.387             |
| <b>QMDt average (22.8 cm) + 3rd quartile residual (3.6 cm)</b>                              |             |               |                   |
| Basswood                                                                                    | -6.37       | 15.57         | 0.409             |
| Sugar maple                                                                                 | 0.45        | 15.57         | 0.029             |
| Ironwood                                                                                    | -6.01       | 15.57         | 0.386             |
| <b>QMDt average (22.8 cm) - 3rd quartile residual (3.6 cm)</b>                              |             |               |                   |
| Basswood                                                                                    | 3.53        | -15.57        | 0.226             |
| Sugar maple                                                                                 | -2.80       | -15.57        | 0.180             |
| Ironwood                                                                                    | 6.22        | -15.57        | 0.400             |
| <b>QMDt average (22.8 cm) + 1st quartile residual (-2.5 cm)</b>                             |             |               |                   |
| Basswood                                                                                    | 2.74        | -10.74        | 0.255             |
| Sugar maple                                                                                 | -1.70       | -10.74        | 0.158             |
| Ironwood                                                                                    | 4.29        | -10.74        | 0.399             |
| Average Sensitivity Index QMDt                                                              |             |               | 0.279             |

#### **B.4. Determining the sensitivity of the random stand-level effect standard deviation to prior specification**

Multilevel model estimates with Bayesian inference can be sensitive to the prior specification on the random-effect variance component because of its impact on fixed-effect coefficients and random effect estimates (Natarajan and Kass 2000; Spiegelhalter et al 2004; Browne and Draper 2006). To test the robustness of the posterior distribution of the random effect variance to different priors, I ran the full generalized linear multilevel model for sugar maple 1-2 m sapling abundance (Chapter 1) and the Model 4 logistic multilevel model for the gap-level percentage of hemlock seedlings browsed (Chapter 2) with three commonly recommended priors: inverse gamma for the precision ( $1/\sigma^2$ ) (Browne and Draper 2006), half-normal for the standard deviation ( $\sigma$ ) (Spiegelhalter et al 2004; Gelman 2006), and uniform for  $\sigma$  on a wide range (Clayton 1996; Spiegelhalter et al 2004; Gelman 2006). The standard deviation for the stand-level random intercept was insensitive to prior specification (i.e. all 95% credible intervals overlapped) for the sapling abundance model (Figure B.2) and percentage of seedlings browsed model (Figure B.3).

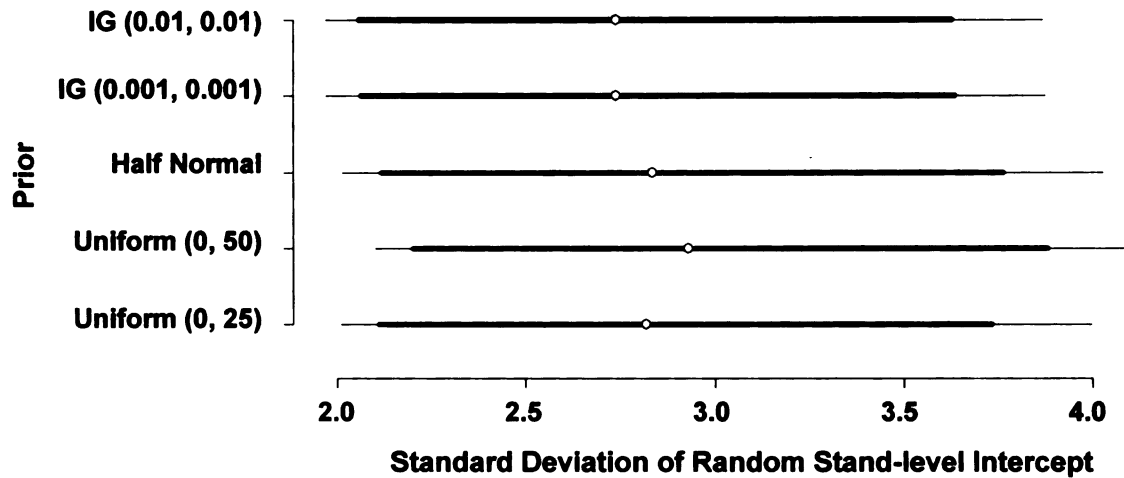


Figure B.2. Effect of the prior on the standard deviation ( $\sigma$ ) of the random stand-level intercept in the sugar maple sapling abundance generalized linear multilevel model: mean, 90% credible interval (thick black line), and 95% credible interval (thin black line) of the posterior distribution. IG (inverse gamma) prior was on the precision ( $1/\sigma^2$ ) and half normal and uniform density priors were on  $\sigma$ . The half normal distribution was  $\sim N(0, 10,000)$ , bounded above 0.

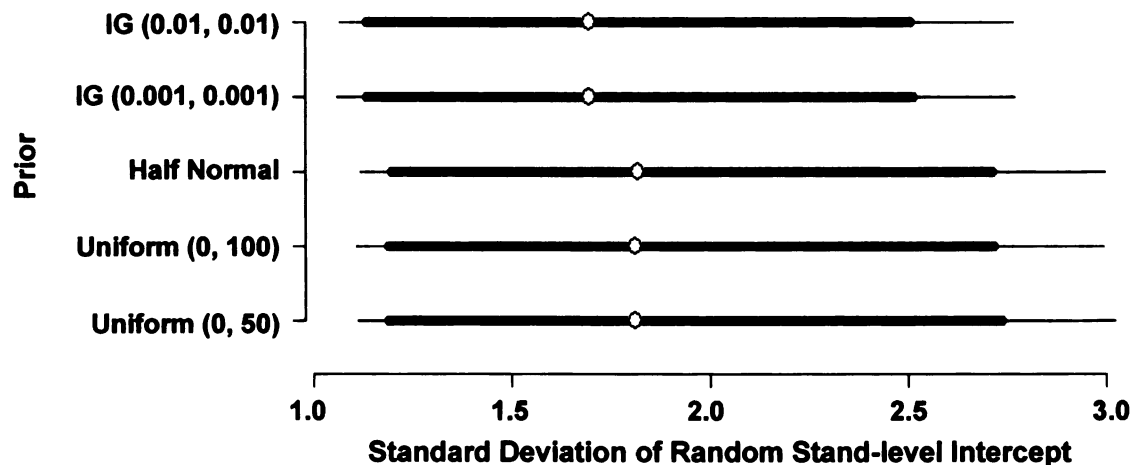


Figure B.3. Effect of the prior on the standard deviation ( $\sigma$ ) of the random stand-level intercept in the gap-level percentage browsed hemlock seedlings logistic multilevel model: mean, 90% credible interval (thick black line), and 95% credible interval (thin black line) of the posterior distribution. IG (inverse gamma) prior was on the precision ( $1/\sigma^2$ ) and half normal and uniform density priors were on  $\sigma$ . The half normal distribution was  $\sim N(0, 10,000)$ , bounded above 0.

### **B.5. Creating image of deer density across the study area using DNR pellet count data collected from 1996-2000 and Universal Kriging**

The Wildlife Division within the Michigan Department of Natural Resources collected deer pellet count data across the Upper Peninsula of Michigan from 1981 to 2000 (Doepker et al 1994; Hill 2001). I developed an interpolated map from this dataset for comparison with deer density estimates at my northern hardwood study stands to validate the spatial pattern observed in deer densities.

I used a subset of the DNR data collected from 1996-2000 within 113 Public Land Survey sections within the four study area counties (Iron, Dickinson, Marquette and Menominee). The DNR randomly selected sections from three strata and surveyed deer pellets within five randomly selected 1/50-acre ( $81 \text{ m}^2$ ) rectangular plots (3.7 m by 22.1 m) (Hill 2001). The average pellet count from these five plots was converted into deer density (deer /  $\text{km}^2$ ) (Appendix B, Section B.1). The years 1996 to 2000 were selected because pellet count surveys were consistently made in more sections during these years than they were during other years. Only sections where pellet surveys were performed more than four years during the five year timeframe were included in analysis.

An empirical semivariogram was developed to describe the spatial correlation between deer densities estimates from sections. Deer density estimates were  $\log_{10} + 1$  transformed to comply with normality assumptions. The spatial coordinates for the deer density estimates were the UTM Northing and Easting for the center of the section. Deer density generally decreased with increasing UTM Northing (Figure B.4) so a semivariogram was developed using residuals from the relationship between transformed deer density and UTM Northing. Generalized Least Squared (GLS) estimation was used

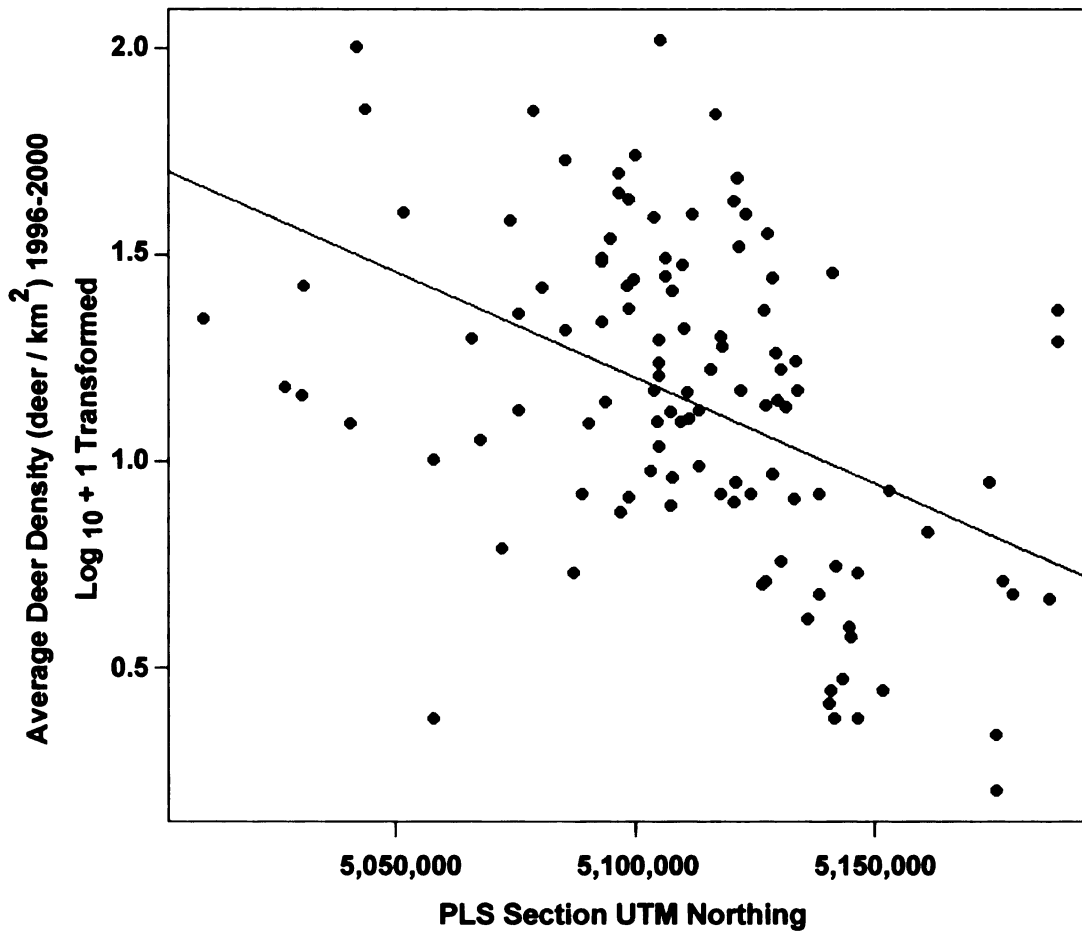


Figure B.4. Average estimated deer density (deer/km<sup>2</sup>) from DNR pellet count surveys 1996-2000 within Iron, Dickinson, Marquette and Menominee counties versus UTM Northing for the Public Land Survey section. Log transformed deer density =  $23.8518 - 4.0\text{e-}06 \times \text{UTM Northing}$  based on GLS-estimation. AIC is 107.7 compared to 85.7 for the null model.

to take into account the correlation between observations. Residuals from the Ordinary Least Squared estimated linear regression between log transformed deer density and UTM Northing were first used to estimate the nugget, partial sill and range for the semivariogram. The semivariogram values were used to develop the correlation matrix necessary for GLS-estimation. GLS residuals were used to develop the final semivariogram which was best approximated with an exponential model in the form

$\gamma(h) = c_0 + c(1 - \exp(-\frac{3h}{a}))$  where  $c_0$  (the nugget) is 0.04,  $c$  (the partial sill) is 0.10,  $a$

(the range) is 20,000 m and  $h$  (the lag distance) is 2,000 m (Figure B.5). There were very few points separated by a distance less than 1,600 m (Table B.5), but the sample size was adequate for the other size bins.

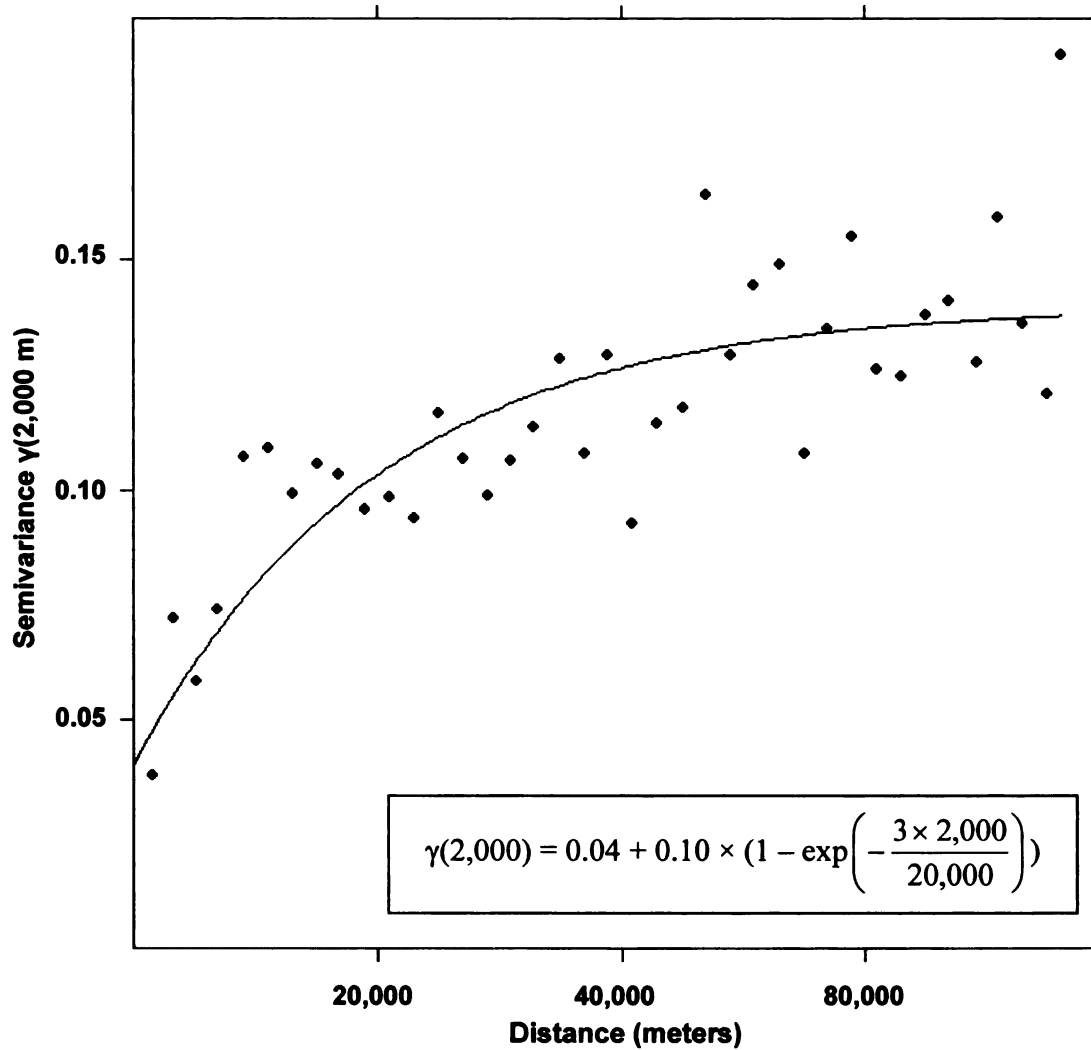


Figure B.5. Semivariogram of the residuals from the GLS-estimated relationship between estimated average deer density (deer/km<sup>2</sup>) and UTM Northing. A lag distance of 2,000 m and an exponential model form were used.

The semivariogram was used to perform universal kriging (Goovaerts 1997) and develop an interpolated map of back-transformed deer density across the study area counties using geostatistical analyst in ERSI ArcMap v 9.2. The average standard error between the observed deer density and predicted from cross validation (Figure B.6) was 0.35 and the root-mean-square error was 0.32.

Table B.5. Number of section (N. sections) centers separated by different distances. The average of the semivariance values from the points in the different distance bins was used to develop the semivariogram (Figure B.3).

| N. sections | Distance (m) | N. sections | Distance (m) |
|-------------|--------------|-------------|--------------|
| 6           | 1610         | 134         | 40967        |
| 24          | 3258         | 140         | 42999        |
| 25          | 5108         | 142         | 45057        |
| 28          | 6854         | 146         | 46933        |
| 52          | 9049         | 145         | 48994        |
| 64          | 11096        | 154         | 50940        |
| 92          | 13104        | 134         | 53045        |
| 92          | 15068        | 128         | 55027        |
| 97          | 16895        | 145         | 56908        |
| 101         | 19012        | 120         | 58948        |
| 94          | 21079        | 116         | 60972        |
| 98          | 23027        | 108         | 62994        |
| 120         | 25008        | 117         | 64984        |
| 131         | 27059        | 155         | 66887        |
| 125         | 29070        | 147         | 69137        |
| 134         | 30938        | 117         | 70963        |
| 131         | 32907        | 110         | 72946        |
| 157         | 35056        | 128         | 74979        |
| 129         | 37014        | 11          | 76084        |
| 149         | 38918        |             |              |

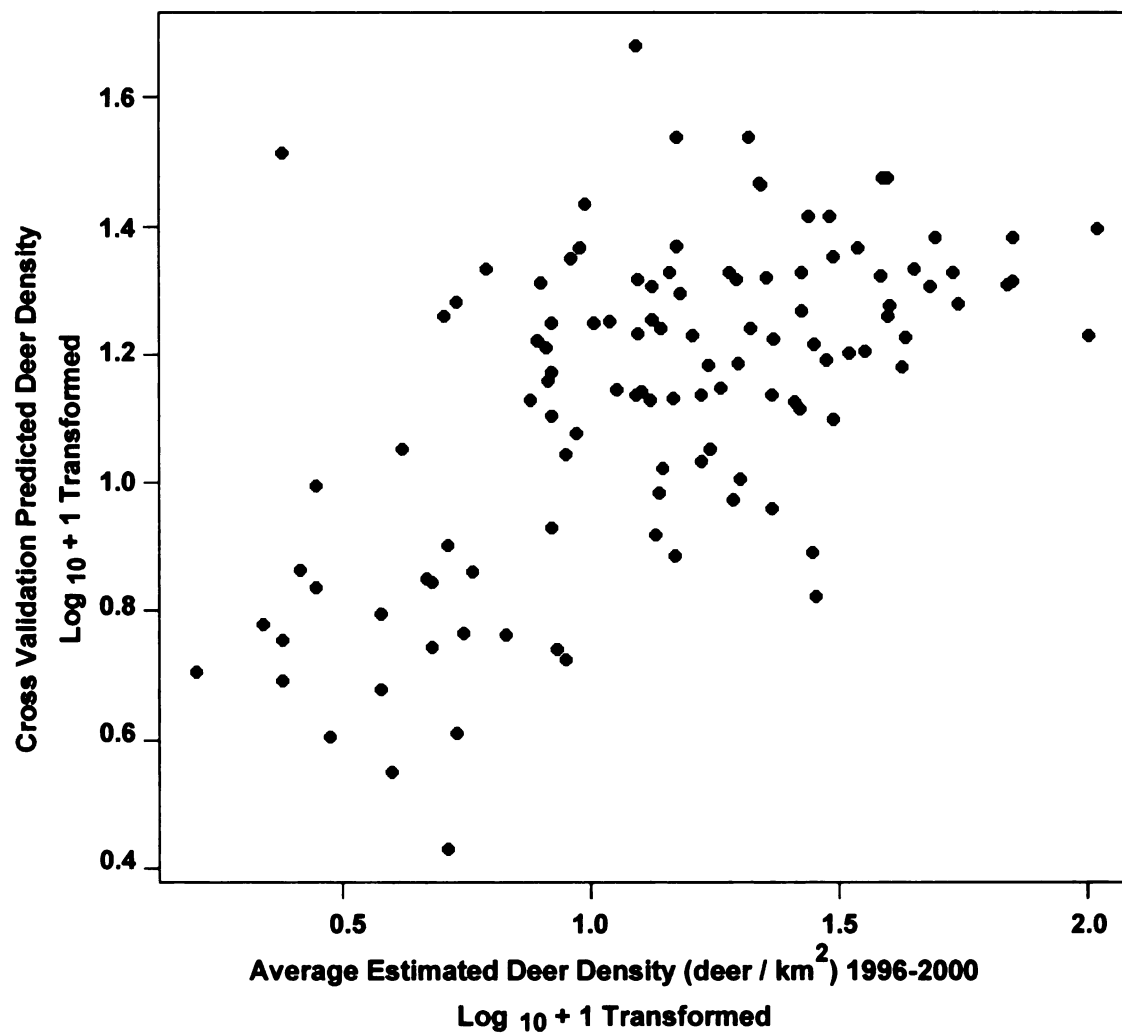


Figure B.6. Observed deer density estimates versus values predicted from cross validation.

## **APPENDIX C: Sample R2WinBUGS code and WinBUGS models**

Models were run with WinBUGS v.1.4.3 (Spiegelhalter et al 2003) through R v.2.9.1 with the package R2WinBUGS (Sturtz et al 2005). Below are WinBUGS models for Chapter 1 seedling and sapling abundance generalized linear multilevel models (GLMM) (Section C.1), log transformed sapling stocking levels and square root transformed Shannon Diversity Index linear multilevel models (LMM) (Section C.2), log transformed sapling growth rates linear models (LM) (Section C.3) and Chapter 2 percentage of seedlings browsed multilevel logistic regression models (Section C.4). WinBUGS model code was derived from examples in Ntzoufras 2009 and Gelman and Hill 2007. Code is also provided for running the sugar maple seedling model with R2WinBUGS, with R code modified from Qian and Shen 2007 (Section C.5).

### **Section C.1. WinBUGS code: Seedling and sapling GLMM**

```
model{  
  for (i in 1:n){  
    y[i] ~ dnegbin(p[i], r2)  
    p[i]<- r2/(r2+mu[i])  
    log(mu[i])<-a[site[i]] + b.cv*cv[i] + b.co*co[i] + b.ss*ss[i]  
  }  
  b.cv~dnorm(0,0.0001) #prior for cv (competing vegetation)  $\beta$   
  b.co~dnorm(0,0.0001) #co = canopy openness  
  b.ss~dnorm(0,0.0001) #ss= seed production potential  
  r2~dgamma(0.1,0.1)  
  for (j in 1:J){
```

```

a[j] ~ dnorm(a.hat[j], tau.a)

a.hat[j] <- g.0 + g.atdhp*atdhp[j] + g.atd*atd[j] + g.atm*atm[j] + g.tmc*tmc[j] +
          g.d*d[j] + g.tsh*tsh[j]

}

g.0 ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)      #g0= overall intercept (AOCa is reference Habitat Type)
g.atdhp ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)  #adthp= ATD-Hp Habitat Type
g.atd ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)    #atd= ATD
g.atm ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)    #atm= ATM
g.tmc ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)    #tmc= TMC
g.d ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)      #d= deer density
g.tsh ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)    #tsh= time since harvest
tau.a <- pow(sigma.a, -2)    #random stand-level intercept precision
sigma.a ~ dunif(0, 50)      #prior on random stand-level intercept stdev
}

```

## **Section C.2. WinBUGS code: Log transformed sapling stocking level and square root transformed Shannon Diversity Index LMM**

```

model{

  for (i in 1:n){

    y[i] ~ dnorm(mu[i], tau.b)

    mu[i]<- a[site[i]] + b.cv*cv[i] + b.co*co[i] + b.hm*hm[i]

  }

  b.cv~dnorm(0,0.0001)
  b.co~dnorm(0,0.0001)

```

```

b.hm~dnorm(0,0.0001)    #hm= overstory diversity

tau.b<-pow(sigma.b, -2)

sigma.b~dunif (0, 50)

  for (j in 1:J){

    a[j] ~ dnorm(a.hat[j], tau.a)

    a.hat[j] <- g.0 + g.atdhp*atdhp[j] + g.atd*atd[j] + g.atm*atm[j] + g.tmc*tmc[j] +
              g.d*d[j] + g.tsh*tsh[j]

  }

g.0 ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

g.atdhp ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

g.atd ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

g.atm ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

g.tmc ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

g.d ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

g.tsh ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

tau.a <- pow(sigma.a, -2)

sigma.a ~ dunif (0, 50)

}

```

### **Section C.3. WinBUGS code: Log transformed sapling growth rates LM**

```

model{

  for (i in 1:n){

    y[i] ~ dnorm(mu[i], tau.b)

```

```

mu[i]<- b.0 + b.ht*ht[i] + b.ar*ar[i] + b.cv*cv[i] + b.co*co[i] + b.atdhp*atdhp[i]
      + b.atd*atd[i] + b.atm*atm[i] + b.tmc*tmc[i] + b.d*d[i] + b.tsh*tsh[i]
}

b.0 ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

b.ht~dnorm(0,0.0001)      #ht=sapling height

b.ar~dnorm(0,0.0001)      #ar= advanced regeneration

b.cv~dnorm(0,0.0001)

b.co~dnorm(0,0.0001)

b.atdhp ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

b.atd ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

b.atm ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

b.tmc ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

b.d ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

b.tsh ~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)

tau.b~dgamma(0.001,0.001)      #prior on sapling-level precision

sigma.b<- 1/sqrt(tau.b)      #sapling-level standard deviation
}

```

#### **Section C.4. WinBUGS code: Gap-level percentage of seedlings browsed or severe browsed multilevel logistic regression model**

```

model{

  for(i in 1:n.gaps){

    r[i]~ dbin(p.bound[i],n[i])  #r[i] = predicted number browsed of n[i] seedlings

    p.bound[i] <- max(0, min(1, p[i])) #constrains probability estimates btwn 0 and 1
  }
}

```

```

      logit(p[i]) <- a.stand[stand[i]] + b.pel*pel[i] + b.dlc*dlc[i]
    }

    b.pel~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)    #pel= pellet counts / gap transect
    b.dlc~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)    #dlc= gap distance to lowland conifer

    for(k in 1:n.stands){

      a.stand[k]~dnorm(a.hat[k], tau.a)

      a.hat[k]<- g.0 + g.dsd*dsd[k]

    }

    g.0~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)      #g.0= overall intercept
    g.dsw~ dnorm(0, 0.0001)    #dsw= deep snow weeks

    tau.a<-pow(sigma.a, -2)

    sigma.a~dunif(0,100)

  }

```

### Section C.5: Code for running sugar maple seedling code with R2WinBUGS

```

AcesacGLMM1 <- function(infile=AS, infile2=ASsite){

y <- infile$AcesacSeedTot

n <- length(y)

cv<-infile$CompetingS

co<- infile$CO

ss<-infile$RibbensAcesac

tsh<-infile2$TSHarvest

d<-infile2$DeerDen

atdhp=infile2$ATDHP

```

```

atd=infile2$ATD

atm=infile2$ATM

tmc=infile2$TMC

J<- length(tsh)

site <- as.numeric(ordered(infile$Site))

bugs.dat <- list(n=n, y=y, J=J, cv=cv, co=co, ss=ss, tsh=tsh, d=d,

                atdhp=atdhp, atd=atd, atm=atm, tmc=tmc, site=site)

## input data needed to run the WinBUGS program

inits1 <- list(a=rnorm(length(infile2$Site)), g.atdhp=rnorm(1), g.atd=rnorm(1),

              g.atm=rnorm(1), g.tmc=rnorm(1), g.tsh=rnorm(1), g.d=rnorm(1),

              g.0=rnorm(1), sigma.a=runif(1), r2=1, b.cv=rnorm(1), b.co=rnorm(1),

              b.ss=rnorm(1))

inits2 <- list(a=rnorm(length(infile2$Site)), g.atdhp=rnorm(1), g.atd=rnorm(1),

              g.atm=rnorm(1), g.tmc=rnorm(1), g.tsh=rnorm(1), g.d=rnorm(1),

              g.0=rnorm(1), sigma.a=runif(1), r2=2, b.cv=rnorm(1), b.co=rnorm(1),

              b.ss=rnorm(1))

inits3 <- list(a=rnorm(length(infile2$Site)), g.atdhp= rnorm(1), g.atd=rnorm(1), g.atm=

              rnorm(1), g.tmc=rnorm(1), g.tsh=rnorm(1), g.d=rnorm(1), g.0=rnorm(1),

              sigma.a=runif(1), r2=5, b.cv=rnorm(1), b.co=rnorm(1), b.ss=rnorm(1))

inits <- list (inits1, inits2, inits3)

## variables to be monitored

```

```

parameters <- c("g.0", "g.atdhp", "g.atd", "g.atm", "g.tmc", "g.tsh", "g.d", "sigma.a",
               "b.cv", "b.co", "b.ss", "r2", "mu") return(list(para=parameters, data=bugs.dat,
               inits=inits))
}

input.to.bugs <- AcesacGLMM1()

AcesacGLMM1 <- bugs(input.to.bugs$data, input.to.bugs$inits,
               input.to.bugs$para, model.file="Seedling_GLMM.txt", n.chains=3,
               n.iter=70000, n.burnin=10000, n.thin=5, DIC=T, bugs.directory="
               C:/Program Files/WinBUGS14", debug=TRUE)

```

## APPENDIX D: Assessing Convergence

Seedling and sapling abundance generalized linear multilevel models (GLMM), log transformed stocking-level linear multilevel models (LMM), square root transformed Shannon Diversity Index linear multilevel models (LMM), log transformed sapling growth rate linear models (LM) (Chapter 1) and percentage of seedlings browsed multilevel logistic models (Chapter 2) were fit using Markov Chain Monte Carlo sampling in WinBugs. Three parallel chains were run with dispersed randomly selected starting values. Model convergence was assessed using the R package coda (Plummer et al 2009). If the Raftery-Lewis diagnostic for a model indicated that an insufficient number of iterations had been run to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ , it was rerun with an increased number of iterations and an increased thinning factor.  $I$  is the proportional increase in  $N$  attributable to autocorrelation and indicates poor mixing of the MCMC chains if values are  $> 5$ .

Based on both diagnostics, the chains converged for all variables across all analyses. All  $Rhat$  values (potential scale reduction factor) from the Gelman-Rubin diagnostic were 1.0 (Gelman and Hill 2007) and the number of iterations run were greater than  $N$  from the Raftery-Lewis diagnostic and  $I$  was less 5 (Table D.1 - D.10)

Table D.1. Convergence in models of spatial trends in seedling and sapling abundance and log transformed stocking-level: sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic *N* (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and *I* (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species                        | Sugar maple                                       | Ironwood     | Other species |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|--------------|---------------|
| <b>Seedling abundance GLMM</b> |                                                   |              |               |
| N obs. gaps /stands            | 337 / 59                                          | 337 / 59     | 337 / 59      |
| N.burnin                       | 10,000                                            | 15,000       | 10,000        |
| N.iter                         | 60,000                                            | 85,000       | 60,000        |
| T.factor                       | 5                                                 | 5            | 5             |
| Variable                       | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( <i>N</i> / <i>I</i> ) |              |               |
| Intercept                      | 4001 / 1.07                                       | 3945 / 1.05  | 4140 / 1.11   |
| Northing                       | 3940 / 1.05                                       | 4338 / 1.16  | 3972 / 1.06   |
| Easting                        | 3787 / 1.01                                       | 4290 / 1.15  | 3839 / 1.02   |
| Stand Stdev                    | 4344 / 1.16                                       | 10550 / 2.82 | 4487 / 1.20   |
| Dispersion parameter           | 3881 / 1.04                                       | 4150 / 1.11  | 3903 / 1.04   |
| <b>Sapling abundance GLMM</b>  |                                                   |              |               |
| N obs. gaps/stands             | 331 / 58                                          | 331 / 58     | 331 / 58      |
| N.burnin                       | 10,000                                            | 10,000       | 10,000        |
| N.iter                         | 60,000                                            | 60,000       | 60,000        |
| T.factor                       | 5                                                 | 5            | 5             |
| Variable                       | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( <i>N</i> / <i>I</i> ) |              |               |
| Intercept                      | 9786 / 2.61                                       | 4001 / 1.07  | 4151 / 1.11   |
| Northing                       | 4275 / 1.14                                       | 3892 / 1.04  | 3865 / 1.03   |
| Easting                        | 3865 / 1.03                                       | 3865 / 1.03  | 3972 / 1.06   |
| Stand Stdev                    | 9364 / 2.50                                       | 4384 / 1.17  | 4340 / 1.16   |
| Dispersion parameter           | 3881 / 1.04                                       | 3839 / 1.02  | 4067 / 1.09   |
| <b>Sapling stocking LMM</b>    |                                                   |              |               |
| N obs. gaps/stands             | 164 / 45                                          | 184 / 49     | 192 / 48      |
| N.burnin                       | 5,000                                             | 5,000        | 5,000         |
| N.iter                         | 15,000                                            | 15,000       | 15,000        |
| T.factor                       | 1                                                 | 1            | 1             |
| Variable                       | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( <i>N</i> / <i>I</i> ) |              |               |
| Intercept                      | 4845 / 1.29                                       | 4307 / 1.15  | 4290 / 1.15   |
| Northing                       | 4713 / 1.26                                       | 4394 / 1.17  | 4508 / 1.20   |
| Easting                        | 4346 / 1.16                                       | 4299 / 1.15  | 4361 / 1.16   |
| Stand Stdev                    | 11360 / 3.03                                      | 9518 / 2.54  | 9024 / 2.41   |
| Gap Stdev                      | 5007 / 1.34                                       | 5257 / 1.4   | 5045 / 1.35   |

Stand Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

Table D.2. Convergence in LMM of spatial trends in square root transformed Shannon Diversity Index (H'): Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species            | H' Seedlings                          | H' Saplings 1-2 m | H' Saplings 1-7 m |
|--------------------|---------------------------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| N obs. gaps/stands | 182 / 54                              | 180 / 42          | 201 / 46          |
| N.burnin           | 10,000                                | 5,000             | 10,000            |
| N.iter             | 60,000                                | 15,000            | 60,000            |
| T.factor           | 1                                     | 1                 | 1                 |
| Variable           | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( $N / I$ ) |                   |                   |
| Intercept          | 3918 / 1.05                           | 4583 / 1.22       | 3918 / 1.05       |
| Northing           | 3839 / 1.02                           | 4541 / 1.21       | 3978 / 1.06       |
| Easting            | 3892 / 1.04                           | 4338 / 1.16       | 3761 / 1.00       |
| Stand Stdev        | 6609 / 1.76                           | 11274 / 3.01      | 4527 / 1.21       |
| Gap Stdev          | 3952 / 1.05                           | 4939 / 1.32       | 3836 / 1.02       |

Stand Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

Table D.3. Convergence in LM of spatial trends in log transformed sapling growth rate after harvest: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species            | Sugar maple                           | Ironwood    |
|--------------------|---------------------------------------|-------------|
| N obs. gaps/stands | 127 / 26                              | 98 / 30     |
| N.burnin           | 5,000                                 | 5,000       |
| N.iter             | 15,000                                | 15,000      |
| T.factor           | 1                                     | 1           |
| Variable           | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( $N / I$ ) |             |
| Intercept          | 3803 / 1.02                           | 3879 / 1.04 |
| Northing           | 3908 / 1.04                           | 3908 / 1.04 |
| Easting            | 3802 / 1.01                           | 3823 / 1.02 |
| Sapling Stdev      | 3846 / 1.03                           | 3946 / 1.05 |

Table D.4. Convergence in GLMM of seedling abundance with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species              | Sugar maple                           | Ironwood     | Other spp   |
|----------------------|---------------------------------------|--------------|-------------|
| N obs. gaps/stands   | 337 / 59                              | 337 / 59     | 337 / 59    |
| N.burnin             | 10,000                                | 15,000       | 15,000      |
| N.iter               | 60,000                                | 84,000       | 1,600,000   |
| T.factor             | 5                                     | 7            | 20          |
| Variable             | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( $N / I$ ) |              |             |
|                      | <b>Full model</b>                     |              |             |
| Canopy openness      | 7615 / 2.03                           | 5593 / 1.49  | 7217 / 1.93 |
| Competing veg        | 6796 / 1.81                           | 5705 / 1.52  | 6852 / 1.83 |
| SP2008               | 6138 / 1.64                           | 4886 / 1.30  | 6273 / 1.67 |
| Intercept            | 3933 / 1.05                           | 4067 / 1.09  | 4404 / 1.18 |
| ATD-Hp               | 3945 / 1.05                           | 4028 / 1.08  | 3918 / 1.05 |
| ATD                  | 3761 / 1.00                           | 8242 / 2.20  | 3918 / 1.05 |
| ATM                  | 3945 / 1.05                           | 4284 / 1.14  | 3945 / 1.05 |
| TMC                  | 3918 / 1.05                           | 10480 / 2.80 | 3865 / 1.03 |
| Deer density         | 3945 / 1.05                           | 4001 / 1.07  | 3945 / 1.05 |
| TSHarvest            | 3839 / 1.02                           | 4547 / 1.21  | 3918 / 1.05 |
| Dispersion parameter | 3972 / 1.06                           | 4151 / 1.11  | 4011 / 1.07 |
| Stand Stdev          | 4226 / 1.13                           | 11494 / 3.07 | 9284 / 2.48 |
|                      | <b>Null model</b>                     |              |             |
| Intercept            | 3865 / 1.03                           | 4272 / 1.14  | 4056 / 1.08 |
| Dispersion parameter | 3956 / 1.06                           | 3888 / 1.04  | 3945 / 1.05 |
| Stand Stdev          | 4167 / 1.11                           | 8066 / 2.15  | 4665 / 1.25 |

SP2008= seedling production potential ( $\Sigma \text{diameter}/\text{distance}^2$ ) in 2008, TSHarvest=time since harvest, Stand Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

Table D.5. Convergence in GLMM of sapling (1-2 m) abundance with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species               | Sugar maple                           | Ironwood    | Other spp   |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------------|-------------|-------------|
| N obs. gaps/stands    | 331 / 58                              | 331 / 58    | 331 / 58    |
| N.burnin              | 15,000                                | 15,000      | 10,000      |
| N.iter                | 84,000                                | 84,000      | 60,000      |
| T.factor              | 5                                     | 5           | 5           |
| Variable              | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( $N / I$ ) |             |             |
|                       | <b>Full model</b>                     |             |             |
| Canopy openness       | 9812 / 2.62                           | 6500 / 1.74 | 6898 / 1.84 |
| Competing veg         | 9216 / 2.46                           | 9008 / 2.40 | 9369 / 2.50 |
| SP <sub>Harvest</sub> | 4768 / 1.27                           | 5130 / 1.37 | 5341 / 1.43 |
| Intercept             | 9940 / 2.65                           | 3972 / 1.06 | 4140 / 1.11 |
| ATD-Hp                | NA                                    | 3685 / 0.98 | 3839 / 1.02 |
| ATD                   | 4151 / 1.11                           | 3735 / 1.00 | 3972 / 1.06 |
| ATM                   | 3967 / 1.06                           | 3721 / 0.99 | 3813 / 1.02 |
| TMC                   | 4028 / 1.08                           | 3787 / 1.01 | 3813 / 1.02 |
| Deer density          | 4496 / 1.20                           | 3787 / 1.01 | 3929 / 1.05 |
| TSHarvest             | 3813 / 1.02                           | 3761 / 1.00 | 3839 / 1.02 |
| Dispersion parameter  | 4021 / 1.07                           | 3819 / 1.02 | 3972 / 1.06 |
| Stand Stdev           | 9612 / 2.57                           | 4094 / 1.09 | 4190 / 1.12 |
|                       | <b>Null model</b>                     |             |             |
| Intercept             | 8576 / 2.29                           | 4098 / 1.09 | 3945 / 1.05 |
| Dispersion parameter  | 3892 / 1.04                           | 3929 / 1.05 | 4011 / 1.07 |
| Stand Stdev           | 9858 / 2.63                           | 4295 / 1.15 | 4255 / 1.14 |

SP<sub>Harvest</sub>= seedling production potential ( $\Sigma \text{diameter}/\text{distance}^2$ ) at time of harvest,  
TSHarvest=time since harvest, Stand Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

Table D.6. Convergence in LMM of log transformed sapling 1-7 m tall stocking with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and maximum Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species            | Sugar maple                           | Ironwood     | Other Spp    |
|--------------------|---------------------------------------|--------------|--------------|
| N obs. gaps/stands | 164 / 45                              | 184 / 49     | 192 / 48     |
| N.burnin           | 5,000                                 | 5,000        | 5,000        |
| N.iter             | 15,000                                | 15,000       | 15,000       |
| T.factor           | 1                                     | 1            | 1            |
| Variable           | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( $N / I$ ) |              |              |
|                    | <b>Full model</b>                     |              |              |
| Canopy openness    | 5094 / 1.36                           | 9618 / 2.57  | 7610 / 2.03  |
| Competing veg      | 5835 / 1.56                           | 9182 / 2.45  | 8618 / 2.30  |
| SPHarvest          | 4267 / 1.14                           | 4661 / 1.24  | 4643 / 1.24  |
| Intercept          | 7652 / 2.04                           | 4508 / 1.20  | 4677 / 1.25  |
| ATD-Hp             | 4479 / 1.20                           | 4558 / 1.22  | 4583 / 1.22  |
| ATD                | 4410 / 1.18                           | 4508 / 1.20  | 4290 / 1.15  |
| ATM                | 4385 / 1.17                           | 4387 / 1.17  | 4338 / 1.16  |
| TMC                | 5152 / 1.38                           | 8032 / 2.14  | 4533 / 1.21  |
| Deer density       | 4267 / 1.14                           | 4252 / 1.14  | 4410 / 1.18  |
| TSHarvest          | 4299 / 1.15                           | 4338 / 1.16  | 4129 / 1.10  |
| Stand Stdev        | 10438 / 2.79                          | 10440 / 2.79 | 10152 / 2.71 |
| Gap Stdev          | 5094 / 1.36                           | 5343 / 1.43  | 5044 / 1.35  |
|                    | <b>Null model</b>                     |              |              |
| Intercept          | 4402 / 1.18                           | 4418 / 1.18  | 4229 / 1.13  |
| Stand Stdev        | 5825 / 1.55                           | 9988 / 2.67  | 5770 / 1.54  |
| Gap Stdev          | 5021 / 1.34                           | 5021 / 1.34  | 5094 / 1.36  |

SPHarvest= seedling production potential ( $\Sigma \text{diameter}/\text{distance}^2$ ) at time of harvest,  
TSHarvest=time since harvest, Stand Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

Table D.7. Convergence in LMM of square root transformed of Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ) with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species                   | H' Seedlings                          | H' Saplings 1-2 m | H' Saplings 1-7 m |
|---------------------------|---------------------------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| N obs. gaps/stands        | 182 / 54                              | 180 / 42          | 201 / 46          |
| N.burnin                  | 20,000                                | 5,000             | 5,000             |
| N.iter                    | 200,000                               | 15,000            | 15,000            |
| T.factor                  | 10                                    | 1                 | 1                 |
| Variable                  | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( $N / I$ ) |                   |                   |
|                           | <b>Full model</b>                     |                   |                   |
| Canopy openness           | 3740 / 1.00                           | 5010 / 1.34       | 9214 / 2.46       |
| Competing veg             | 3834 / 1.02                           | 9784 / 2.61       | 8990 / 2.40       |
| H' Overstory <sup>1</sup> | 3872 / 1.03                           | 9120 / 2.43       | 5038 / 1.34       |
| Intercept                 | 3818 / 1.02                           | 4800 / 1.28       | 8762 / 2.34       |
| ATD-Hp                    | 3740 / 1.00                           | 4687 / 1.25       | 4765 / 1.27       |
| ATD                       | 3787 / 1.01                           | 4299 / 1.15       | 8800 / 2.35       |
| ATM                       | 3818 / 1.02                           | 4669 / 1.25       | 4982 / 1.33       |
| TMC                       | 3802 / 1.01                           | 7864 / 2.10       | 8752 / 2.34       |
| Deer density              | 3802 / 1.01                           | 4660 / 1.24       | 4765 / 1.27       |
| TSHarvest                 | 3802 / 1.01                           | 4483 / 1.20       | 4661 / 1.24       |
| Stand Stdev               | 9650 / 2.58                           | 14559 / 3.89      | 12726 / 3.40      |
| Gap Stdev                 | 3845 / 1.03                           | 5103 / 1.36       | 4997 / 1.33       |
|                           | <b>Null model</b>                     |                   |                   |
| Intercept                 | 3853 / 1.03                           | 4385 / 1.17       | 4687 / 1.25       |
| Stand Stdev               | 4095 / 1.09                           | 9358 / 2.50       | 12498 / 3.34      |
| Gap Stdev                 | 3978 / 1.06                           | 4970 / 1.33       | 5048 / 1.35       |

TSHarvest=time since harvest, Stand Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

<sup>1</sup> H'Overstory for H'Seedlings is Shannon Diversity of overstory trees, H'Overstory for H'Saplings 1-2 and 1-7 m tall is Shannon Diversity of overstory trees and stumps

Table D.8. Convergence in LM of log transformed sapling growth rates with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and Raftery-Lewis diagnostic *N* (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of +/-0.5%) and *I* (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species            | Sugar maple                                       | Ironwood    |
|--------------------|---------------------------------------------------|-------------|
| N obs. gaps/stands | 127 / 26                                          | 98 / 30     |
| N.burnin           | 5,000                                             | 5,000       |
| N.iter             | 15,000                                            | 15,000      |
| T.factor           | 1                                                 | 1           |
| Variable           | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( <i>N</i> / <i>I</i> ) |             |
|                    | <b>Full model</b>                                 |             |
| Intercept          | 4043 / 1.08                                       | 3913 / 1.04 |
| Advanced regen     | 3832 / 1.02                                       | 3802 / 1.01 |
| Sapling height     | 3740 / 1.00                                       | 3802 / 1.01 |
| Canopy openness    | 3844 / 1.03                                       | 3823 / 1.02 |
| Competing veg      | 3782 / 1.01                                       | 3908 / 1.04 |
| ATD-Hp             | 3844 / 1.03                                       | 3811 / 1.02 |
| ATD                | 3938 / 1.05                                       | 3782 / 1.01 |
| ATM                | 3799 / 1.01                                       | 3782 / 1.01 |
| TMC                | 3802 / 1.01                                       | 3761 / 1.00 |
| Deer density       | 3938 / 1.05                                       | 3865 / 1.03 |
| TSHarvest          | 3746 / 1.00                                       | 3770 / 1.01 |
| Sapling Stdev      | 3860 / 1.03                                       | 3959 / 1.06 |
|                    | <b>Null model</b>                                 |             |
| Intercept          | 3841 / 1.03                                       | 3834 / 1.02 |
| Sapling Stdev      | 3841 / 1.03                                       | 3782 / 1.01 |

Advanced regen= bivariate variable indicating if a variable is advanced regeneration,  
TSHarvest=time since harvest.

Table D.9. Convergence in multilevel logistic models of gap-level percentage of seedlings browsed within gaps with gap- and stand-level covariates: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and Raftery-Lewis diagnostic  $N$  (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of  $\pm 0.5\%$ ) and  $I$  (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species            | Hemlock                                 | White pine  |
|--------------------|-----------------------------------------|-------------|
| N obs. gaps/stands | 338 / 34                                | 338 / 34    |
| N.burnin           | 10,000                                  | 10,000      |
| N.iter             | 30,000                                  | 30,000      |
| T.factor           | 5                                       | 5           |
| Variable           | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( $N$ / $I$ ) |             |
|                    | <b>Model 1 (null)</b>                   |             |
| Intercept          | 3887 / 1.04                             | 3761 / 1.00 |
| Stand Stdev        | 3962 / 1.06                             | 3900 / 1.04 |
|                    | <b>Model 2 (Deer + DSW)</b>             |             |
| Intercept          | 4084 / 1.09                             | 3710 / 0.99 |
| Deer density       | 4028 / 1.08                             | 3973 / 1.06 |
| DSW                | 3973 / 1.06                             | 3866 / 1.03 |
| Stand Stdev        | 4028 / 1.08                             | 4028 / 1.08 |
|                    | <b>Model 3 (PGC + DSW)</b>              |             |
| Intercept          | 3973 / 1.06                             | 3710 / 0.99 |
| Centered PGC       | 3973 / 1.06                             | 3710 / 0.99 |
| DSW                | 3866 / 1.03                             | 3761 / 1.00 |
| Stand Stdev        | 3973 / 1.06                             | 4084 / 1.09 |

Deer= winter deer density in 10's of deer / km<sup>2</sup>, DSW=deep snow weeks (number of weeks from November 2007 to April 2008 with snow depth > 40 cm), PGC= pellet group count (the number of deer fecal pellets found within a 40 m<sup>2</sup> area in a planted harvest gap), Stand Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

Table D.10. Convergence in multilevel logistic models of gap-level percentage of seedlings browsed within gaps with gap- and stand-level covariates for stands where DLC could be determined: Sample size (N obs.), burn-in length (N.burnin), iterations after burn-in (N.iter), thinning factor (T.factor) and Raftery-Lewis diagnostic *N* (number of iterations required to have a 95% probability of estimating the 2.5% quantile with a tolerance of +/-0.5%) and *I* (Dependence Factor) from three parallel MCMC chains.

| Species            | Hemlock                                           | White pine  |
|--------------------|---------------------------------------------------|-------------|
| N obs. gaps/stands | 126 / 13                                          | 126 / 13    |
| N.burnin           | 10,000                                            | 10,000      |
| N.iter             | 30,000                                            | 30,000      |
| T.factor           | 5                                                 | 5           |
| Variable           | Raftery-Lewis Diagnostics ( <i>N</i> / <i>I</i> ) |             |
|                    | <b>Model 1 (null)</b>                             |             |
| Intercept          | 3973 / 1.06                                       | 3866 / 1.03 |
| Stand Stdev        | 4084 / 1.09                                       | 3973 / 1.06 |
|                    | <b>Model 4 (DLC + PGC + DSW)</b>                  |             |
| Intercept          | 4050 / 1.08                                       | 3973 / 1.06 |
| Centered DLC       | 4558 / 1.22                                       | 5485 / 1.46 |
| Centered PGC       | 5408 / 1.44                                       | 5705 / 1.52 |
| DSW                | 3866 / 1.03                                       | 3866 / 1.03 |
| Stand Stdev        | 3973 / 1.06                                       | 3866 / 1.03 |
|                    | <b>Model 5 (DLC)</b>                              |             |
| Intercept          | 4084 / 1.09                                       | 3761 / 1.00 |
| Centered DLC       | 5095 / 1.36                                       | 4623 / 1.23 |
| Stand Stdev        | 4028 / 1.08                                       | 4028 / 1.08 |

DSW=deep snow weeks (number of weeks from November 2007 to April 2008 with snow depth > 40 cm), PGC= pellet group count (the number of deer fecal pellets found within a 40 m<sup>2</sup> area in a planted harvest gap), DLC= distance to lowland conifer in 10s of m, Stand Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

## APPENDIX E: Model Parameters

Bayesian inference was used with Markov chain Monte Carlo (MCMC) sampling to estimate parameter values and obtain credible intervals for generalized linear mixed models (GLMM), linear mixed models (LMM) and linear models (LM).

Table E.1. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on seedling abundance <1 m tall: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in seedling abundance with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate on the log scale. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.

| Variable            | Sugar maple |               | Ironwood |               | Other Spp |               |
|---------------------|-------------|---------------|----------|---------------|-----------|---------------|
|                     | Mean        | CI            | Mean     | CI            | Mean      | CI            |
| GLMM full model     |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| Gap level           |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| Canopy openness     | -0.08       | -0.31 – 0.14  | -0.13    | -0.52 – 0.26  | 0.21      | -0.07 – 0.48  |
| Competing veg       | -0.23**     | -0.42 – -0.05 | -0.34*   | -0.71 – 0.02  | -0.43**   | -0.70 – -0.16 |
| SP2008              | 0.12        | -0.06 – 0.30  | 0.37**   | 0.08 – 0.74   | -0.03     | -0.25 – 0.21  |
| Stand level         |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| Intercept           | 1.40**      | 0.80 – 2.00   | -0.37    | -1.23 – 0.43  | -0.90**   | -1.82 – -0.08 |
| ATD-Hp              | 0.18        | -0.70 – 1.08  | -0.02    | -1.27 – 1.21  | 1.49**    | 0.30 – 2.75   |
| ATD                 | 1.50**      | 0.55 – 2.48   | -2.11**  | -3.81 – -0.61 | 0.83      | -0.49 – 2.19  |
| ATM                 | 1.15**      | 0.16 – 2.15   | -1.86**  | -3.53 – -0.29 | 0.94      | -0.44 – 2.35  |
| TMC                 | 1.74*       | -0.13 – 3.65  | -2.91    | -7.14 – 0.55  | 3.68**    | 1.18 – 6.31   |
| Deer density        | -0.24       | -0.61 – 0.12  | 0.11     | -0.43 – 0.68  | -0.08     | -0.61 – 0.42  |
| Time since harvest  | 0.24        | -0.10 – 0.58  | -0.53*   | -1.11 – 0.04  | 0.21      | -0.27 – 0.70  |
| Variance components |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| r                   | 0.94        | 0.76 – 1.16   | 0.50     | 0.32 – 0.75   | 0.78      | 0.56 – 1.06   |
| Stand-level Stdev   | 1.14        | 0.88 – 1.45   | 1.45     | 0.94 – 2.10   | 1.52      | 1.11 – 2.06   |
| DIC                 | 2172.61     |               | 701.20   |               | 1132.04   |               |
| GLMM null model     |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| Intercept           | 2.06**      | 1.69 – 2.42   | -0.99**  | -1.58 – -0.47 | -0.02*    | -0.57 – 0.48  |
| r                   | 0.90        | 0.73 – 1.09   | 0.45     | 0.29 – 0.68   | 0.77      | 0.56 – 1.05   |
| Stand-level Stdev   | 1.32        | 1.05 – 1.66   | 1.54     | 1.06 – 2.15   | 1.74      | 1.33 – 2.28   |
| DIC                 | 2184.88     |               | 714.41   |               | 1132.46   |               |
| N. gaps / stands    | 337 / 59    |               | 337 / 59 |               | 337 / 59  |               |

\*\*indicates 95% credible interval does not overlap 0, \* indicate 90% CI does not overlap 0

r= negative binomial gap-level dispersion parameter, SP2008= seedling production potential

( $\Sigma \text{diameter}^2 / \text{distance}^2$ ) for 2008, Stand-level Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

Table E.2. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on sapling abundance 1-2 m tall: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in sapling abundance with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate on the log scale. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type for ironwood and other species. ATD-Hp and AOCa were combined as the reference Habitat Types to improve convergence of the sugar maple model. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.

| Variable              | Sugar maple |               | Ironwood |              | Other Spp |               |
|-----------------------|-------------|---------------|----------|--------------|-----------|---------------|
|                       | Mean        | CI            | Mean     | CI           | Mean      | CI            |
| GLMM full model       |             |               |          |              |           |               |
| Gap level             |             |               |          |              |           |               |
| Canopy openness       | 0.29**      | 0.03 – 0.56   | 0.05     | -0.30 – 0.40 | 0.59**    | 0.33 – 0.86   |
| Competing veg         | -0.49**     | -0.72 – -0.26 | -0.15    | -0.48 – 0.19 | -0.42**   | -0.70 – -0.14 |
| SP <sub>Harvest</sub> | -0.07       | -0.23 – 0.09  | -0.04    | -0.23 – 0.21 | 0.07      | -0.10 – 0.27  |
| Stand level           |             |               |          |              |           |               |
| Intercept             | -5.32**     | -7.70 – -3.53 | 0.38     | -1.30 – 1.91 | -0.67     | -2.18 – 0.71  |
| ATD-Hp                | NA          | NA            | -0.48    | -2.80 – 1.86 | 0.76      | -1.30 – 2.85  |
| ATD                   | 7.63**      | 5.23 – 10.58  | -1.48    | -4.06 – 1.08 | 1.64      | -0.51 – 3.89  |
| ATM                   | 7.40**      | 4.90 – 10.46  | -0.41    | -2.96 – 2.23 | 1.47      | -0.78 – 3.78  |
| TMC                   | 8.34**      | 3.59 – 13.80  | -1.75    | -6.93 – 3.19 | 3.35      | -0.80 – 7.71  |
| Deer density          | -1.24**     | -2.47 – -0.08 | 0.42     | -0.55 – 1.37 | -0.49     | -1.34 – 0.36  |
| Time since harvest    | 0.75        | -0.17 – 1.73  | -0.02    | -0.90 – 0.88 | 0.39      | -0.40 – 1.19  |
| Variance components   |             |               |          |              |           |               |
| r                     | 1.49        | 1.06 – 2.01   | 0.64     | 0.48 – 0.82  | 0.84      | 0.64 – 1.07   |
| Stand-level Stdev     | 2.93        | 2.10 – 4.11   | 3.03     | 2.25 – 4.08  | 2.68      | 2.05 – 3.50   |
| DIC                   | 1197.10     |               | 1299.96  |              | 1468.80   |               |
| GLMM null model       |             |               |          |              |           |               |
| Intercept             | -2.05**     | -4.10 – -0.41 | -0.08    | -0.95 – 0.70 | 0.44      | -0.35 – 1.18  |
| r                     | 1.28        | 0.94 – 1.72   | 0.64     | 0.49 – 0.82  | 0.74      | 0.58 – 0.94   |
| Stand-level Stdev     | 5.46        | 3.99 – 7.55   | 2.78     | 2.12 – 3.65  | 2.64      | 2.05 – 3.41   |
| DIC                   | 1218.17     |               | 1296.83  |              | 1489.85   |               |
| N. gaps / stands      | 331 / 58    |               | 331 / 58 |              | 331 / 58  |               |

\*\*indicates 95% credible interval does not overlap 0

r= negative binomial gap-level dispersion parameter, SP<sub>Harvest</sub>= seedling production potential

( $\Sigma \text{diameter}^2 / \text{distance}^2$ ) at the time of harvest, Stand-level Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

Table E.3. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on log transformed sapling 1-7m tall: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Only gaps with stocking-levels > 0 by species were used in these analyses. Positive values indicate increases in stocking-levels on the log scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.

| Variable              | Sugar maple |               | Ironwood |               | Other Spp |               |
|-----------------------|-------------|---------------|----------|---------------|-----------|---------------|
|                       | Mean        | CI            | Mean     | CI            | Mean      | CI            |
| LMM full model        |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| Gap level             |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| Canopy openness       | -0.05       | -0.30 – 0.21  | 0.09     | -0.20 – 0.38  | 0.31**    | 0.02 – 0.61   |
| Competing veg         | -0.36**     | -0.61 – -0.11 | -0.38**  | -0.65 – -0.10 | -0.36**   | -0.64 – -0.08 |
| SP <sub>Harvest</sub> | 0.02        | -0.17 – 0.22  | 0.00     | -0.16 – 0.16  | 0.02      | -0.17 – 0.23  |
| Stand level           |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| Intercept             | -2.10**     | -2.99 – -1.24 | -2.30**  | -3.04 – -1.57 | -3.43**   | -4.26 – -2.63 |
| ATD-Hp                | -0.09       | -1.40 – 1.22  | -0.14    | -1.21 – 0.93  | 0.63      | -0.61 – 1.87  |
| ATD                   | 1.39**      | 0.18 – 2.60   | 0.00     | -1.22 – 1.21  | 1.21**    | 0.01 – 2.42   |
| ATM                   | 0.69        | -0.53 – 1.93  | -0.16    | -1.37 – 1.04  | 0.61      | -0.65 – 1.89  |
| TMC                   | 0.56        | -1.59 – 2.70  | 0.83     | -2.05 – 3.70  | 1.28      | -1.02 – 3.59  |
| Deer density          | -0.26       | -0.74 – 0.22  | 0.20     | -0.29 – 0.70  | -0.23     | -0.74 – 0.28  |
| Time since harvest    | 0.02        | -0.40 – 0.43  | 0.18     | -0.20 – 0.57  | 0.24      | -0.23 – 0.72  |
| Variance components   |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| Stand-level Stdev     | 1.20        | 0.86 – 1.62   | 1.20     | 0.88 – 1.60   | 1.30      | 0.94 – 1.73   |
| Gap-level Stdev       | 1.12        | 0.99 – 1.28   | 1.18     | 1.04 – 1.33   | 1.25      | 1.12 – 1.41   |
| DIC                   | 540.62      |               | 622.61   |               | 674.85    |               |
| LMM null model        |             |               |          |               |           |               |
| Intercept             | -1.50**     | -1.96 – -1.05 | -2.34**  | -2.72 – -1.96 | -2.73**   | -3.17 – -2.30 |
| Stand-level Stdev     | 1.35        | 1.03 – 1.75   | 1.14     | 0.84 – 1.50   | 1.34      | 1.02 – 1.74   |
| Gap-level Stdev       | 1.14        | 1.01 – 1.30   | 1.20     | 1.07 – 1.36   | 1.27      | 1.13 – 1.42   |
| DIC                   | 544.32      |               | 625.81   |               | 675.80    |               |
| N. gaps / stands      | 164 / 45    |               | 184 / 49 |               | 193 / 48  |               |

\*\*indicates 95% credible interval does not overlap 0

SP<sub>Harvest</sub> = seedling production potential ( $\Sigma \text{diameter}^2 / \text{distance}^2$ ) at the time of harvest, Stand-level Stdev = standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept.

Table E.4. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on square root transformed Shannon Diversity Index ( $H'$ ) for seedlings, saplings 1-2 m and saplings 1-7 m tall: mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Only gaps with  $H' > 0$  by size class were used in these analyses. Positive values indicate increases in  $H'$  on the square root scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.

| Variable                  | H' Seedlings |              | H' Saplings 1-2 m |                | H' Saplings 1-7 m |              |
|---------------------------|--------------|--------------|-------------------|----------------|-------------------|--------------|
|                           | Mean         | CI           | Mean              | CI             | Mean              | CI           |
| LMM full model            |              |              |                   |                |                   |              |
| Gap level                 |              |              |                   |                |                   |              |
| Canopy openness           | 0.02         | -0.02 – 0.05 | 0.00              | -0.04 – 0.05   | 0.00              | -0.04 – 0.04 |
| Competing veg             | -0.01        | -0.04 – 0.03 | 0.03              | -0.01 – 0.07   | 0.02              | -0.02 – 0.06 |
| H' Overstory <sup>1</sup> | 0.07**       | 0.04 – 0.10  | 0.02              | -0.02 – 0.07   | 0.02              | -0.02 – 0.06 |
| Stand level               |              |              |                   |                |                   |              |
| Intercept                 | 0.75**       | 0.68 – 0.82  | 0.78**            | 0.66 – 0.90    | 0.80**            | 0.69 – 0.90  |
| ATD-Hp                    | 0.04         | -0.06 – 0.14 | -0.11             | -0.28 – 0.07   | -0.09             | -0.24 – 0.06 |
| ATD                       | -0.10*       | -0.21 – 0.01 | -0.17**           | -0.34 – -0.005 | -0.14*            | -0.29 – 0.01 |
| ATM                       | -0.10*       | -0.22 – 0.01 | -0.13             | -0.30 – 0.04   | -0.10             | -0.25 – 0.05 |
| TMC                       | 0.00         | -0.21 – 0.21 | 0.10              | -0.21 – 0.40   | 0.06              | -0.21 – 0.33 |
| Deer density              | 0.01         | -0.04 – 0.05 | -0.04             | -0.10 – 0.03   | -0.03             | -0.09 – 0.03 |
| Time since harvest        | 0.02         | -0.02 – 0.06 | 0.00              | -0.06 – 0.06   | 0.00              | -0.05 – 0.05 |
| Variance components       |              |              |                   |                |                   |              |
| Stand-level Stdev         | 0.10         | 0.06 – 0.14  | 0.16              | 0.10 – 0.22    | 0.14              | 0.09 – 0.19  |
| Gap-level Stdev           | 0.16         | 0.14 – 0.18  | 0.19              | 0.17 – 0.22    | 0.19              | 0.17 – 0.22  |
| DIC                       | -112.27      |              | -46.81            |                | -54.46            |              |
| LMM null model            |              |              |                   |                |                   |              |
| Intercept                 | 0.73*        | 0.69 – 0.77  | 0.69*             | 0.63 – 0.75    | 0.72*             | 0.67 – 0.77  |
| Stand-level Stdev         | 0.12         | 0.08 – 0.17  | 0.16              | 0.12 – 0.21    | 0.14              | 0.10 – 0.18  |
| Gap-level Stdev           | 0.17         | 0.15 – 0.19  | 0.19              | 0.17 – 0.22    | 0.19              | 0.17 – 0.22  |
| DIC                       | -100.26      |              | -50.06            |                | -57.47            |              |
| N. gaps / stands          | 182 / 54     |              | 180 / 42          |                | 201 / 46          |              |

\*\*indicates 95% credible interval does not overlap 0, \* indicates 90% CI does not overlap 0

Stand-level Stdev= standard deviation for the random stand-level intercept

<sup>1</sup> H'Overstory for H'Seedlings is Shannon Diversity of overstory trees, H'Overstory for H'Saplings 1-2 and 1-7 m tall is Shannon Diversity of overstory trees and stumps

Table E.5. Effects of gap and stand-level variables on log transformed sapling after harvest growth rates (m/yr): mean parameter estimates and 95% credible interval from posterior distributions. Positive values indicate increases in growth rate on the log scale with a one standard deviation increase in that covariate. AOCa is the reference Habitat Type. A decrease in DIC of 5 or more indicates improved performance for full model over the null model.

| Variable                   | Sugar maple |               | Ironwood |               |
|----------------------------|-------------|---------------|----------|---------------|
|                            | Mean        | CI            | Mean     | CI            |
| <b>LM full model</b>       |             |               |          |               |
| Intercept                  | -1.28**     | -1.40 – -1.16 | -1.26**  | -1.42 – -1.10 |
| Advanced regen             | -0.40**     | -0.53 – -0.28 | -0.23**  | -0.38 – -0.08 |
| Sapling height             | 0.32**      | 0.26 – 0.38   | 0.34**   | 0.26 – 0.41   |
| Canopy openness            | -0.03       | -0.08 – 0.02  | 0.06*    | -0.01 – 0.13  |
| Competing veg              | 0.00        | -0.04 – 0.05  | 0.02     | -0.03 – 0.07  |
| ATD-Hp                     | -0.14       | -0.48 – 0.21  | -0.09    | -0.24 – 0.06  |
| ATD                        | -0.09       | -0.21 – 0.04  | 0.06     | -0.10 – 0.23  |
| ATM                        | -0.06       | -0.21 – 0.08  | -0.07    | -0.24 – 0.09  |
| TMC                        | -0.12       | -0.33 – 0.08  | -0.03    | -0.28 – 0.23  |
| Deer density               | -0.02       | -0.09 – 0.05  | 0.03     | -0.03 – 0.08  |
| Time since harvest         | -0.26**     | -0.31 – -0.21 | -0.10**  | -0.17 – -0.02 |
| <b>Variance components</b> |             |               |          |               |
| Sapling Stdev              | 0.23        | 0.21 – 0.27   | 0.24     | 0.21 – 0.28   |
| DIC                        |             | 2.34          |          | 13.64         |
| <b>LM null model</b>       |             |               |          |               |
| Intercept                  | -1.64**     | -1.70 – -1.57 | -1.46*   | -1.53 – -1.38 |
| Sapling Stdev              | 0.38        | 0.34 – 0.43   | 0.37     | 0.32 – 0.43   |
| DIC                        |             | 114.86        |          | 84.03         |
| N. gaps / stands           |             | 127 / 26      |          | 98 / 30       |

\*\*indicates 95% credible interval does not overlap 0, \* indicates 90% CI does not overlap 0

Advanced regen= bivariate variable indicating if a variable is advanced regeneration.

## **Literature Cited**

## LITERATURE CITED

- Ahlgren, C.E. 1976. Regeneration of red pine and white pine following wildfire and logging in northeastern Minnesota. *Journal of Forestry* 74 (3): 135-140.
- Albert, D.A. 1995. Regional landscape ecosystems of Michigan, Minnesota and Wisconsin: a working map and classification. USDA Forest Service, North Central Forest Experiment Station General Technical Report 178, St. Paul, Minnesota.
- Aldrich, P.R., G.R. Parker, J. Romero-Severson, and C.H. Michler. 2005. Confirmation of oak recruitment failure in Indiana old-growth forest: 75 years of data. *Forest Science* 51 (5): 406-416.
- Arbogast, C., Jr. 1957. Marking guides for northern hardwoods under the selection system. USDA Forest Service, Lake States Forest Experimental Station Paper 56, St. Paul, Minnesota.
- Augustine, D.J. and S.J. McNaughton. 1998. Ungulate effects on the functional species composition of plant communities: Herbivore selectivity and plant tolerance. *The Journal of Wildlife Management* 62 (4): 1165-1183.
- Bailey, R.E. and R.J. Putman. 1981. Estimation of fallow deer (*Dama dama*) populations from faecal accumulation. *Journal of Applied Ecology* 18 (3): 697-702.
- Barrett, A. 2003. National Operational Hydrologic Remote Sensing Center Snow Data Assimilation System (SNODAS) Products at NSIDC. National Snow and Ice Data Center Special Report 11, Boulder, Colorado.
- Bates, D. and M. Maechler. 2009. lme4: Linear mixed-effects models using Eigen and Eigen. R package version 0.999375-32. Online: <http://cran.r-project.org/web/packages/lme4/index.html>. Accessed: 4 June 2009.
- Belden, A.C. and S.G. Pallardy. 2009. Successional trends and apparent *Acer saccharum* regeneration failure in an oak-hickory forest in central Missouri, USA. *Plant Ecology* 204 (2): 305-322.
- Bigelow, S.W. and C.D. Canham. 2002. Community organization of tree species along soil gradients in a north-eastern USA forest. *Journal of Ecology* 90 (1): 188-200.
- Blouch, R.I. 1984. Northern Great Lake states and Ontario forests. pp 391-410. In: L.K. Halls (ed.), *White-Tailed Deer: Ecology and Management*. Stackpole Books, Harrisburg, Pennsylvania.

- Bolker, B.M., M.E. Brooks, C.J. Clark, S.W. Geange, J.R. Poulsen, M.H.H. Stevens and J.S. White. 2009. Generalized linear mixed models: A practical guide for ecology and evolution. *Trends in Ecology and Evolution* 24 (3): 127-135.
- Brokaw, N. and R.T. Busing. 2000. Niche versus chance and tree diversity in forest gaps. *Trends in Ecology and Evolution* 15 (5): 183-188.
- Browne, W.J. and D. Draper. 2006. A comparison of Bayesian and likelihood-based methods for fitting multilevel models. *Bayesian Analysis* 1 (3): 473-514.
- Burger, T.L. and J. Kotar. 2003. A Guide to Forest Communities and Habitat Types of Michigan. The Department of Forest Ecology and Management, University of Wisconsin-Madison.
- Bush, R.R. and G. Brand. 1993. Lake States (LS) Variant Overview: Forest Vegetation Simulator. USDA Forest Service, Forest Management Service Center, Fort Collins, Colorado.
- Canavan, S.J. and C.W. Ramm. 2000. Accuracy and precision of 10 year predictions for Forest Vegetation Simulator-Lake States. *Northern Journal of Applied Forestry* 17 (2), 62-70.
- Canham, C.D. 1988. Growth and canopy architecture of shade-tolerant trees: Response to canopy gaps. *Ecology* 69 (3): 786-795.
- Canham, C.D., J.S. Denslow, W.J. Platt, J.R. Runkle, T.A. Spies and P.S. White. 1990. Light regimes beneath closed canopies and tree-fall gaps in temperate and tropical forests. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research* 20 (5): 620-631.
- Canham, C.D. and P.L. Marks. 1985. The response of woody plants to disturbance: patterns of establishment and growth. pp. 197-216. In: S.T.A. Pickett and P.S. White (eds.). *The Ecology of Natural Disturbance and Patch Dynamics*. Academic Press, Inc, Orland, Florida.
- Carleton, T.J., P.F. Maycock, R. Arnup and A.M. Gordon. 1996. *In situ* regeneration of *Pinus strobus* and *P. resinosa* in the Great Lakes forest communities of Canada. *Journal of Vegetation Science* 7 (3): 431-444.
- Carmean, W.H. 1972. Site index curves for upland oaks in the central states. *Forest Science* 18 (2): 109-120.
- Caspersen, J.P. and R.K. Kobe. 2001. Interspecific variation in sapling mortality in relation to growth and soil moisture. *Oikos* 92 (1): 160-168.
- Clark, J.S. 2007. *Models for Ecological Data: An Introduction*. Princeton University Press, Princeton, New Jersey.

- Clark, J.S., E. Macklin and L. Wood. 1998. Stages and spatial scales of recruitment limitation in southern Appalachian forests. *Ecological Monographs* 68 (2): 213-235.
- Clayton, D.G. 1996. Generalized linear mixed models. pp. 276-301. In: Gilks, W.R., S. Richardson and D.J. Spiegelhalter (eds.). *Markov Chain Monte Carlo in Practice*. Chapman & Hall: New York, New York.
- Coates, K.D. 2000. Conifer seedling response to northern temperate forest gaps. *Forest Ecology and Management* 127: 249-269.
- Cole, W.G. and C.G. Lorimer. 2005. Probabilities of small-gap capture by sugar maple saplings based on height and crown growth data from felled trees. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research* 35 (3): 643-655.
- Collins, B.S., K.P. Dunne and S.T.A. Pickett. 1985. Responses of forest herbs to canopy gaps. pp. 217-234. In: S.T.A. Pickett and P.S. White (eds.). *The Ecology of Natural Disturbance and Patch Dynamics*. Academic Press, Inc: Orland, Florida.
- Congdon, P. 2003. *Applied Bayesian Modeling*. John Wiley & Sons, Ltd: New York, New York.
- Cook, B. 2008. Deer depredation on the forests of Michigan. Michigan Society of American Foresters.
- Cote, S.D., T.P. Rooney, J. Tremblay, C. Dussault, and D.M. Waller. 2004. Ecological impacts of deer overabundance. *Annual Review of Ecology, Evolution and Systematics* 35: 113-147.
- Crow, T.R., A. Haney, and D.M. Waller. 1994. Report on the scientific roundtable on biological diversity convened by the Chequamegon and Nicolet National Forests. USDA Forest Service, North Central Forest Experiment Station General Technical Report 166, St. Paul, Minnesota.
- DeGraaf, R.M., J.B. Hestbeck and M. Yamasaki. 1998. Associations between breeding bird abundance and stand structure in the White Mountains, New Hampshire and Maine, USA. *Forest Ecology and Management* 103: 217-233.
- Demaerschalk, J.P. and S.A.Y. Omule. 1978. Stump and breast height diameter tables for the British Columbia merchantable tree species. Faculty of Forestry Report, University of British Columbia.
- De Stevens, D. 1991. Experiments on mechanisms of tree establishment in old-field succession: Seedling survival and growth. *Ecology* 72 (3): 1076-1088.

- Didier, K.A. and W.F. Porter. 2003. Relating spatial patterns of sugar maple reproductive success and relative deer density in northern New York State. *Forest Ecology and Management* 181 (1-2): 253-266.
- Dietze, M. and J.S. Clark. *In prep.* The role of individual variability and dieback in sapling response to large forest gaps.
- Doepker, R., D.E. Beyer, and M. Donovan. 1994. Deer population trends in Michigan's Upper Peninsula. Michigan Department of Natural Resources, Wildlife Division Report 3254.
- Domke, G.M., J.P. Caspersen and T.A. Jones. 2007. Light attenuation following selection harvesting in northern hardwood forests. *Forest Ecology and Management*: 239: 182-190.
- Donovan, G. 2005. Chronic regeneration failure in northern hardwood stands: A liability to certified forest landowners. *Proceedings from Forests & Whitetails: Striving for Balance*. Michigan Society of American Foresters. 9-10 June 2005. St. Ignace, Little Bear Conference Center.
- Donovan, M. 2005. Michigan GAP analysis project. pp 47-49. In: Maxwell et al. (eds). *Gap Analysis Bulletin No. 13 USGS/BRD/Gap Analysis Program*. Moscow, Idaho, USA.
- Dovčiak, M., P.B. Reich and L.E. Frelich. 2003. Seed rain, safe sites, competing vegetation, and soil resources spatially structure white pine regeneration and recruitment. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research* 33 (10): 1892-1904.
- Dumont, A., J. Oullet, M. Crête, and J. Huot. 2005. Winter foraging strategy of white-tailed deer at the northern limit of its range. *Ecoscience* 12 (4): 476-484.
- Enders, C.K. and D. Tofghi. 2007. Centering predictor variables in cross-sectional multilevel models: A new look at an old issue. *Psychological Methods* 12 (2): 121-138.
- Eschtruth, A.K. and J.J. Battles. 2008. Deer herbivory alters forest response to canopy decline caused by an exotic insect pest. *Ecological Applications* 18 (2): 360-376.
- Eyre, F.H. and W.M. Zillgitt. 1953. Partial cuttings in northern hardwoods of the Lake States: Twenty-year experimental results. USDA Forest Service, Lake States Forest Experiment Station Technical Bulletin 1076, St. Paul, Minnesota.
- Fei, S. and K.C. Steiner. 2008. Relationships between advance oak regeneration and biotic and abiotic factors. *Tree Physiology* 28: 1111-1119.

- Felix, A.B., H. Campa, III, K.F. Millenbah, S.R. Winterstein and W.E. Moritz. 2004. Development of landscape-scale habitat-potential models for forest wildlife planning and management. *Wildlife Society Bulletin* 32 (3): 795-806.
- Filip, Stanley M. 1973. Cutting and cultural methods for managing northern hardwoods in the Northeastern United States. USDA Forest Service, Northeastern Forest Experiment Station General Technical Report 5. Upper Darby, Pennsylvania.
- Finzi, A.C. and C.D. Canham. 2000. Sapling growth in response to light and nitrogen availability in a southern New England forest. *Forest Ecology and Management* 131: 153-165.
- Forsyth, D.M., R.J. Barker, G. Morriss, M.P. Scroggie. 2007. Modeling the relationship between fecal pellet indices and deer density. *The Journal of Wildlife Management* 71 (3): 964-970.
- Frawley, B.J. 2005. 2004 quality deer management (QDM) survey: Deer management units in the Upper Peninsula. Michigan Department of Natural Resources Wildlife Division Report No. 3432.
- Frazer, G.W., C.D. Canham, and K.P. Lertzman. 1999. Gap Light Analyzer (GLA), Version 2.0: Imaging Software to Extract Canopy Structure and Gap Light Transmission Indices from True-colour Fisheye Photographs, Users Manual and Program Documentation. Simon Fraser University, Burnaby, British Columbia and the Institute of Ecosystem Studies, Millbrook, New York.
- Frelich, L.E. and C.G. Lorimer. 1985. Current and predicted long-term effects of deer browsing in hemlock forests in Michigan, USA. *Biological Conservation* 34: 99-120.
- Fuller, T.K. 1991. Do pellet counts index white-tailed deer numbers and population change? *Journal of Wildlife Management* 55 (3): 393-396.
- Garrett, P.W. and R.E. Graber. 1995. Sugar maple seed production in northern New Hampshire. USDA Forest Service, Northeastern Forest Experiment Station Research Paper 697, Radnor, Pennsylvania.
- Gelman, A. 2006. Prior distributions for variance parameters in hierarchical models. *Bayesian Analysis*: 1(3): 515-533.
- Gelman, A. and J. Hill. 2007. *Data Analysis Using Regression and Multilevel/Hierarchical Models*. Cambridge University Press, New York, New York.
- George, L.O. and F.A. Bazzaz. 1999. The fern understory as an ecological filter: Emergence and establishment of canopy-tree seedlings. *Ecology* 80 (3): 833-845.

- Goldstein, H. 1995. Multilevel Statistical Models. Edward Arnold, London.
- Goovaerts, P. 1997. Geostatistics for Natural Resources Evaluation. Oxford University Press: New York, New York.
- Graber, R.E., and W.B. Leak. 1992. Seed fall in an old-growth northern hardwood forest. USDA Forest Service, Northeastern Forest Experiment Station Research Paper 663, Radnor, Pennsylvania.
- Graham, S.A. 1954. Changes in northern Michigan forests from browsing by deer. Transactions of the Nineteenth North American Wildlife Conference 19: 526-533.
- Gray, A.N., T.A. Spies and M.J. Easter. 2002. Microclimatic and soil moisture responses to gap formation in coastal Douglas-fir forests. Canadian Journal of Forest Research 32 (2): 332- 343.
- Green, J.C. Ecological features of white pine stands for wildlife. 1992. In: R.A. Stine and M.J. Baughman (eds.). Proceedings from The White Pine Symposium. 16-18 September 1992. Duluth, Minnesota.
- Grisez, T.J. 1960. Slash helps protect seedlings from deer browsing. Journal of Forestry 58 (5): 385-387.
- Guldin, J.M. 1996. The role of uneven-aged silviculture in the context of ecosystem management. Western Journal of Applied Forestry 11 (1): 4-12.
- Heezen, K.L. and J.R. Tester. 1967. Evaluation of radio-tracking by triangulation with special reference to deer movements. Journal of Wildlife Management 31 (1): 124-141.
- Henne, P.D., F.S. Hu and D.T. Cleland. 2007. Lake-effect snow as the dominant control of mesic-forest distribution in Michigan, USA. Journal of Ecology 95 (3): 517-529.
- Herman, K., M. Joseph, T. Oliver, D. Wagner, H.W. Scullon, J. Ferris and D. Kuhr. 2004. A process for implementing mesic conifer restoration on State land, Western Upper Peninsula, Michigan. Michigan Department of Natural Resources, Wildlife Division, Western Upper Peninsula Management Unit.
- Hill, H.R. 2001. The 2001 deer pellet group surveys. Michigan Department of Natural Resources Wildlife Report No. 3349. Lansing, Michigan.
- Horsley, S.B. and D.A. Marquis. 1983. Interference by weeds and deer with Allegheny hardwood reproduction. Canadian Journal of Forest Research 13: 61-69.

- Horsley, S.B., S.L. Stout, and D.S. deCalesta. 2003. White-tailed deer impact on the vegetation dynamics of a northern hardwood forest. *Ecological Applications* 13 (1): 98-118.
- Hough, A.F. 1949. Deer and rabbit browsing and available winter forage in Allegheny hardwood forests. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 13 (1): 135-141.
- Houle, G. 1992. Spatial relationship between seed and seedling abundance and mortality in a deciduous forest of northeastern North America. *Journal of Ecology* 80: 99-108.
- Hughes, J.W. and T.J. Fahey. 1988. Seed dispersal and colonization in a disturbed northern hardwood forest. *Bulletin of the Torrey Botanical Club* 115 (2): 89-99.
- Jenkins, J. 1997. Hardwood regeneration failure in the Adirondacks: Preliminary studies of incidence and severity. The Wildlife Conservation Society, Working Paper No. 9.
- Jenkins, K.J. and B.F.J. Manly. 2008. A double-observer method for reducing bias in faecal pellet surveys of forest ungulates. *Journal of Applied Ecology* 45 (5): 1339-1348.
- Jerome, D.S. 2006 *draft*. Landforms of the Upper Peninsula, Michigan. USDA Natural Resource Conservation Service.
- Juice, S.M., Timothy J.F., Thomas G.S., C.T. Driscoll, E.G. Denny, C. Eagar, N.L. Cleavitt, R. Minocha and A.D. Richardson. 2006. Response of sugar maple to calcium addition to northern hardwood forest. *Ecology* 87 (5): 1267-1280.
- Kelsall, J. P. 1969. Structural adaptations of moose and deer for snow. *Journal of Mammology* 50 (2): 302-310.
- Kendeigh, S.C. 1945. Community selection by birds on the Helderberg Plateau of New York. *The Auk* 62 (3): 418-436.
- Kittredge, D.B. and P.M.S. Ashton. 1995. Impact of deer browsing on regeneration in mixed stands in southern New England. *Northern Journal of Applied Forestry* 12 (3): 115-120.
- Kobe, R.K. 2006. Sapling growth as a function of light and landscape-level variation in soil water and foliar nitrogen in northern Michigan. *Oecologia* 147: 119-133.
- Kobe, R.K., G.E. Likens and C. Eagar. 2002. Tree seedling growth and mortality responses to manipulations of calcium and aluminum in a northern hardwood forest. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research* 32 (6): 954-966.

- Kohn, B.E. and J.J. Mooty. 1971. Summer habitat of white-tailed deer in north-central Minnesota. *The Journal of Wildlife Management* 35 (3): 476-487.
- Kraft, L.S., T.R. Crow, D.S. Buckley, E.A. Nauertz and J.C. Zasada. 2004. Effects of harvesting and deer browsing on attributes of understory plants in northern hardwood forests, Upper Michigan, USA. *Forest Ecology and Management* 199: 219-230.
- Krasny, M.E. and M.C. Whitmore. 1992. Gradual and sudden forest canopy gaps in Allegheny northern hardwood forests. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research* 22 (2): 139-143.
- Krueger, L.M. and C.J. Peterson. 2006. Effects of white-tailed deer on *Tsuga canadensis* regeneration: Evidence of microsites as refugia from browsing. *American Midland Naturalist* 156 (2): 353-362.
- Krueger, J.A. and K.J. Puettmann. 2004. Growth and injury patterns of eastern white pine (*Pinus strobus* L.) seedlings as affected by hardwood overstory density and weeding treatments. *Northern Journal of Applied Forestry* 21 (2): 61-68.
- Langdon, C.A. 2001. A comparison of white-tailed deer population estimation methods in Western Virginia. Master's thesis. Division of Forestry, West Virginia University, Morgantown, West Virginia.
- Laurent, E.J., H.J. Shi, D. Gatzolis, J.P. LeBouton, M.B. Walters, and J.G. Liu. 2005. Using the spatial and spectral precision of satellite imagery to predict wildlife occurrence patterns. *Remote Sensing of Environment* 97 (2): 249-262.
- Leak, W.B. 1999. Species composition and structure of a northern hardwood stand after 61 years of group/patch selection. *Northern Journal of Applied Forestry* 16:151-153.
- LeBouton, J.P., E.J. Laurent, M.B. Walters, J.G. Liu. 2005. Forests for dinner: Exploring a model of how deer affect advance regeneration at stand and landscape scales. *Proceedings from Forests & Whitetails: Striving for Balance*. Michigan Society of American Foresters. 9-10 June 2005. St. Ignace, Little Bear Conference Center.
- Liang, S.Y. and S.W. Seagle. 2002. Browsing and microhabitat effects on riparian forest woody seedling demography. *Ecology* 83 (1): 212-227.
- Linden, D.W. 2006. Modeling current and historic habitat for Canada lynx (*Lynx canadensis*) in the Upper Peninsula of Michigan. Master's thesis. Department of Fisheries and Wildlife, Michigan State University, East Lansing, Michigan.
- Marquis, D.A. 1975. Seed storage and germination under northern hardwood forests. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research* 5: 478-484.

- Marquis, D.A. and R. Brenneman. 1981. The impact of deer on forest vegetation in Pennsylvania. USDA Forest Service, Northeastern Forest Experiment Station General Technical Report 65, Broomall, Pennsylvania.
- Marx, L.M. 2005. Substrate Limitations to *Tsuga canadensis* and *Betula alleghaniensis* seedling establishment. PhD thesis. Department of Forestry, Michigan State University, East Lansing, Michigan.
- Marx, L.M. and M.B. Waters. 2008. Survival of tree seedlings on different species of decaying wood maintains tree distribution in Michigan hemlock-hardwood forests. *Journal of Ecology* 96: 505-513.
- McClure, J.W., T.D. Lee and W.B. Leak. 2000. Gap capture in northern hardwoods: Patterns of establishment and height growth in four species. *Forest Ecology and Management* 127: 181-189.
- MDNR (Michigan Department of Natural Resources). 2006. Draft 2006 State forest management plan. Forest, Mineral and Fire Management Division, IC 4600.
- MDNR (Michigan Department of Natural Resources). 2008. Weekly winter severity index report. Wildlife Division.
- Metzger, F.T. and C.H. Tubbs. 1971. The influence of cutting method on regeneration of second-growth northern hardwoods. *Journal of Forestry* 69 (9): 559-564.
- Miller, R.O. 2004. Regeneration in a heavily browsed northern hardwood stand twelve years after scarification and fencing. Michigan State University, Upper Peninsula Tree Improvement Center Research Report.
- Millington, J.D.A., M.B. Walters, M.S. Matonis and J.G. Liu. 2009. Effects of local and regional landscape characteristics on wildlife distribution across managed forests. *In review* *Forest Ecology and Management*.
- Mladenoff, D.J. and F. Stearns. 1993. Eastern hemlock regeneration and deer browsing in the northern Great Lakes region: A re-examination and model simulation. *Conservation Biology* 7: 889-900.
- Natarajan, R. and R.E. Kass. 2000. Reference Bayesian methods for generalized linear mixed models. *Journal of the American Statistical Association* 95 (449): 227-237.
- National Climatic Data Center. 2009. U.S. Department of Commerce. Online: <http://www.ncdc.noaa.gov/oa/ncdc.html>. Accessed: 11 June 2009.
- Neff, D.J. 1968. The pellet-group count technique for big game trend, census, and distribution: A review. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 32 (3): 597-614.

- Nobis, M. 2005. SideLook 1.1- Imaging software for the analysis of vegetation structure with true-colour photographs. Online: <http://www.appleco.ch>. Accessed: 5 January 2009.
- NOHRSC (National Operational Hydrologic Remote Sensing Center). 2004. Snow Data Assimilation System (SNODAS) Data Products at NSIDC. Boulder, Colorado USA: National Snow and Ice Data Center.
- Ntzoufras, I. 2009. Bayesian Modeling Using WinBUGS. John Wiley & Sons, Inc: Hoboken, New Jersey.
- Nyland, R.D. 1998. Selection system in northern hardwoods. *Journal of Forestry* 96 (7): 18-21.
- OMNR. 1998. A silvicultural guide for the tolerant hardwood forest in Ontario. Ontario Ministry of Natural Resources. Queen's Printer for Ontario: Toronto, Ontario.
- OMNR. 2003. Old growth policy for Ontario's Crown forests, v1. Ontario Ministry of Natural Resources: Toronto, Ontario.
- Ozoga, J.J. 1968. Variations in microclimate in a conifer swamp deeryard in northern Michigan. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 32 (3): 574-585.
- Ozoga, J.J and L.W. Gysel. 1972. Response of white-tailed deer to winter weather. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 36 (3): 892-896.
- Ozoga, J.J. and L.J. Verme. 1970. Winter feeding patterns of penned white-tailed deer. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 34 (2): 431-439.
- Patmos, W. 1995. New Hampshire's native trees, shrubs and vines with wildlife value. University of New Hampshire, Cooperative Extension Report 449.
- Pauley, G.R., J.M. Peek, P. Zager. 1993. Predicting white-tailed deer habitat use in northern Idaho. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 57: 904-913.
- Plummer, M., N. Best, K. Cowles and K. Vines. 2009. Coda: Output analysis and diagnostics for MCMC. R package version 0.13-4. Online: <http://cran.r-project.org/web/packages/coda/index.html>. Accessed: 10 August 2009.
- Pokharel, B. and R.E. Froese, 2008. Evaluating alternative implementations of the Lake States FVS diameter increment model. *Forest Ecology and Management* 255 (5-6): 1759-1771.
- Poole, K.G. and G. Mowat. 2005. Winter habitat relationships of deer and elk in the temperate interior mountains of British Columbia. *Wildlife Society Bulletin* 33 (4): 1288-1302.

- Potter-Witter, K. and J.T. Lacksen. 1993. The status of the maple-birch forest type in Michigan. Michigan State University Department of Forestry Research Report 533. East Lansing, Michigan.
- Qian, S.S. and Z. Shen. 2007. Ecological applications of multilevel analysis of variance. *Ecology* 88 (10): 2489–2495.
- R Development Core Team. 2009. R: a language and environment for statistical computing. R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria. Online: <http://www.R-project.org>. Accessed: 10 January 2009.
- Racevskis, L.A. and F. Lupi. 2006. Comparing urban and rural perceptions of and familiarity with the management of forest ecosystems. *Society and Natural Resources* 19 (6): 479-495.
- Randall, J.A. 2007. Deer and sedge effects on tree seedling dynamics in northern temperate forests. PhD Dissertation. Department of Forestry, Michigan State University, East Lansing, Michigan.
- Ray, D.G., R.D. Nyland, and R.D. Yanai. 1999. Patterns of early cohort development following shelterwood cutting in three Adirondack northern hardwood stands. *Forest Ecology and Management* 119 (1-3): 1-11.
- Ribbens, E., J.A. Silander, Jr., S.W. Pacala. 1994. Seedling recruitment in forests: Calibrating models to predict patterns of tree seedling dispersion. *Ecology* 75 (6): 1794-1806.
- Romagosa, M.A. and D.J. Robison. 2003. Biological constraints on the growth of hardwood regeneration in upland Piedmont forests. *Forest Ecology and Management* 175: 545-561.
- Rooney, T.P. 2001. Deer impacts on forest ecosystems: A North American perspective. *Forestry* 74 (4): 201-208
- Rooney, T.P., R.J. McCormick, S.L. Solheim, and D.M. Waller. 2000. Regional variation in recruitment of hemlock seedlings and saplings in the upper Great Lakes, USA. *Ecological Application* 10: 1119-1132.
- Rooney, T.P., S.L. Solheim, D.M. Waller. 2002. Factors affecting the regeneration of northern white cedar in lowland forests of the Upper Great Lakes region, USA. *Forest Ecology and Management* 163 (1): 119-130.
- Rooney, T.P. and D.M. Waller. 2003. Direct and indirect effects of white-tailed deer in forest ecosystems. *Forest Ecology and Management* 181 (1-2): 165-176.

- Runkle, J.R. 1981. Gap regeneration in some old-growth forests of the eastern United States. *Ecology* 62 (4): 1041-1051.
- Runkle, J.R. 1982. Patterns of disturbance in some old-growth mesic forests of eastern North America. *Ecology* 63 (5): 1533-1546.
- Runkle, J.R. 1984. Development of woody vegetation in treefall gaps in a beech-sugar maple forest. *Holarctic Ecology* 7: 157-164.
- Runkle, J.R. 1985. Disturbance regimes in temperate forests. pp 17-33. In: S.T.A. Pickett and P.S. White (eds.). *The ecology of natural disturbance and patch dynamics*. Academic Press, New York, New York.
- Sage, R.W. Jr., W.F. Porter, and H. B. Underwood. 2003. Windows of opportunity: White-tailed deer and the dynamics of northern hardwood forests of the northeastern US. *Journal for Nature Conservation* 10 (4): 213-220.
- Saunders, M.R. and K.J. Puettmann. 1999. Use of vegetational characteristics and browsing patterns to predict deer damage in eastern white pine (*Pinus strobus*) plantations. *Northern Journal of Applied Forestry* 16 (2): 96-102.
- Schreeg, L.A., R.K. Kobe and M.B. Walters. 2005. Tree seedling growth, survival and morphology in response to landscape-level variation in soil resource availability in northern Michigan. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research* 35 (2): 263-273.
- Schumann, M.E., A.S. White, J.W. Witham. 2003. The effects of harvest-created gaps on plant species diversity, composition and abundance in a Maine oak-pine forest. *Forest Ecology and Management* 176: 543-561.
- Shafer, E.L., T.J. Grisez and E. Sowa. 1961. Results of deer exclosure studies in northeastern Pennsylvania. USDA Forest Service Northeastern Forest Experiment Station Research Note 121, Upper Darby, Pennsylvania.
- Shi, H., E.J. Laurent, J. LeBouton, L. Racevskis, K.R. Hall, M. Donovan, R.V. Doepker, M.B. Walters, F. Lupi, J.G. Liu. 2006. Local spatial modeling of white-tailed deer distribution. *Ecological Modelling* 190: 171-189.
- Shibata, M. and T. Nakashizuka. 1995. Seed and seedling demography of four co-occurring *Carpinus* species in a temperate deciduous forest. *Ecology* 76 (4): 1099-1108.
- Shields, J.M. and C.R. Webster. 2007. Ground-layer response to group selection with legacy-tree retention in a managed northern hardwood forest. *Canadian Journal of Forest Resources* 37 (10): 1797-1807.

- Shields, J.M., C.R. Webster, and L.M. Nagel. 2007. Factors influencing tree species diversity and *Betula alleghaniensis* establishment in silvicultural openings. *Forestry* 80 (3): 293-307.
- Smith, D.M. 1951. The influence of seedbed conditions on the regeneration of eastern white pine. Connecticut Agricultural Experiment Station Bulletin 545, New Haven, Connecticut.
- Smith, D.M., B.C. Larson, M.J. Kelty, P.M.S. Ashton. 1997. The Practice of Silviculture: Applied Forest Ecology 9<sup>th</sup> ed. John Wiley & Sons, Inc: New York, New York.
- Smith, W.B., P.D. Miles, J.S. Vissage and S.A. Pugh. 2004. Forest Resources of the United States, 2002. USDA Forest Service, North Central Research Station General Technical Report 241, St Paul, Minnesota.
- Spiegelhalter, D.J., N.G. Best, B.P. Carlin and A. Linde. 2002. Bayesian measures of model complexity and fit. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society, Series B (Statistical Methodology)* 64 (4): 583-639.
- Spiegelhalter, D.J., A. Thomas, N.G. Best, W.R. Gilks and D. Lunn. 2003. BUGS: Bayesian inference using Gibbs sampling. MRC Biostatistics Unit, Cambridge, England. Online: [www.mrc-bsu.cam.ac.uk/bugs](http://www.mrc-bsu.cam.ac.uk/bugs). Accessed: 15 July 2009.
- Spiegelhalter, D.J., K.R. Abrams and J.P. Myles. 2004. Bayesian approaches to clinical trails and health-care evaluation. John Wiley & Sons, Ltd, West Sussex, England.
- Stearns, F.W. 1997. History of the Lake States forests: Natural and human impacts. pp 8-29. In: J.M. Vasievich and H.H. Webster (eds.). Lake States Regional Forest Resources Assessment: Technical Papers. USDA Forest Service, North Central Forest Experiment Station General Technical Report 189, St. Paul, Minnesota.
- Stoeckeler, J.H., R.O. Strothmann, and L.W. Krefting. 1957. Effect of deer browsing on reproduction in the northern hardwood-hemlock type in northeastern Wisconsin. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 21 (1): 75-80.
- Sturtz, S., U. Ligges, and A. Gelman. 2005. R2WinBUGS: A package for running WinBUGS from R. *Journal of Statistical Software*, 12(3), 1-16.
- Swift, E. 1949. Wisconsin's deer damage to forest reproduction survey: Final report. Wisconsin Conservation Department Publication 347.
- Swihart, R.K. and R.H. Yahner. 1983. Browse preferences of jackrabbits and cottontails for species used in shelterbelt plantings. *Journal of Forestry* 81 (2): 92-94.

- Telfer, E.S. 1972. Browse selection by deer and hares. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 36 (4): 1344-1349.
- Thorne, S.G. 1992. White pine: Challenges for the future. In: R.A. Stine and M.J. Baughman (eds.). *Proceedings from the White Pine Symposium*. 16-18 September 1992. Duluth, Minnesota.
- Tierson, W.C., G.F. Mattfeld, R.W. Sage, Jr., D.F. Behrend. 1985. Seasonal movements and home ranges of white-tailed deer in the Adirondacks. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 49 (3): 760-769.
- Todd, J.B. 1927. Winter food of cottontail rabbits. *Journal of Mammalogy* 8 (3): 222-228.
- Tubbs, C.H. 1968. The influence of residual stand densities on regeneration in sugar maple stands. USDA Forest Service, North Central Forest Experiment Station Research Note 47, St. Paul, Minnesota.
- Tubbs, C.H. 1977. Natural regeneration of northern hardwoods in the northern Great Lakes region. USDA Forest Service, North Central Forest Experiment Station Research Paper 150, St. Paul, Minnesota.
- VanDeelen, T.R., H. Campa, III, M. Hamady, J.B. Haufler. 1998. *The Journal of Wildlife Management* 62 (1): 205-213.
- Verme, L.J. 1965. Swamp conifer deeryards in northern Michigan: Their ecology and management. *Journal of Forestry* 63 (7): 523-529.
- Verme, L.J. 1973. Movements of white-tailed deer in upper Michigan. *Journal of Wildlife Management* 37 (4): 545-552.
- Walters, M.B. and P.B. Reich. 1997. Growth of *Acer saccharum* seedlings in deeply shaded understories of northern Wisconsin: Effects of nitrogen and water availability. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research* 27 (2): 237-247.
- Ward, J.S. and G.R. Stephens. 1995. Protection of tree seedlings from deer browsing. In: K.W. Gottschalk and S.L.C. Fosbroke (eds.). *Tenth Central Hardwood Forest Conference Proceedings*. 5-8 March 1995. Morgantown, West Virginia. USDA Forest Service, Northeastern Forest Experiment Station General Technical Report 197, Radnor, Pennsylvania.
- Webb, W.L., D.F. Behrend, and B. Saisorn. 1977. Effect of logging on songbird populations in a northern hardwood forest. *Wildlife Monographs* 55: 1-35.

- Webster, C.R. and C.G. Lorimer. 2002. Single-tree versus group selection in hemlock-hardwood forests: Are smaller opening less productive? *Canadian Journal of Forest Research* 32 (4): 591-604.
- Webster, C.R. and C.G. Lorimer. 2005. Minimum opening sizes for canopy recruitment of midtolerant tree species: A retrospective approach. *Ecological Applications* 15 (4): 1245-1262.
- Weisberg, P.J. and H. Bugmann. 2003. Forest dynamics and ungulate herbivory: From leaf to landscape. *Forest Ecology and Management* 181: 1-12.
- Whitney, G.G. 1987. An ecological history of the Great Lakes forest of Michigan. *Journal of Ecology* 75: 667-684.
- Wilensky, U. 1999. NetLogo. Center for Connected Learning and Computer-Based Modeling, Northwestern University. Evanston, Illinois. Online: <http://ccl.northwestern.edu/netlogo/>. Accessed: 16 September 2009.
- Williamson, S.J. and D.H. Hirth. 1985. An evaluation of edge use by white-tailed deer. *Wildlife Society Bulletin* 13 (3): 252-257.
- Yamamoto, S. 2000. Forest Gap dynamics and tree regeneration. *Journal of Forest Research* 5: 223-229.
- Yawney, H.W. and C.M. Carl, Jr. 1970. A sugar maple planting study in Vermont. USDA Forest Service, Northeastern Forest Experiment Station Research Paper 175, Upper Darby, Pennsylvania.
- Zhao, Y., J. Staudenmayer, B.A. Coull and M.P. Wand. 2006. General design Bayesian generalized linear mixed models. *Statistical Science* 21 (1): 35-51.

MICHIGAN STATE UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES



3 1293 03063 3691